

GENEALOGY  
OF THE  
FORD FAMILY

---

WRITTEN BY  
JAMES FORD, M. D.

LATE SURGEON U. S. ARMY.

Words are things, and a small drop of ink,  
Falling, like dew on a thought, produces  
That which makes thousands, perhaps millions, think."  
—BYRON.

---

WABASH, IND.

1890.

PRINTED BY  
THE PLAIN DEALER COMPANY,  
WABASH, INDIANA.

## PREFACE.

A book of reference, has, for years, been in contemplation, giving a history of the Ford Families from their earliest known period through all their ramifications to the year 1889.

It was the intention to give, not only the family record of births, marriages, and deaths, but a concise history of each individual, so the reader would form some idea of the character of the person he was reading about. The dates given, without any qualification, are correct and reliable.

### PLAN OF THE WORK.

Henry Ford, our known primogenitor, had seven children: five sons and two daughters. Each member of this family form a Group. Thus, the history of this member is given through all his or her branches, up to the present period. Each group is taken in its genealogical order, and forms a separate history—complete within itself so far as known.

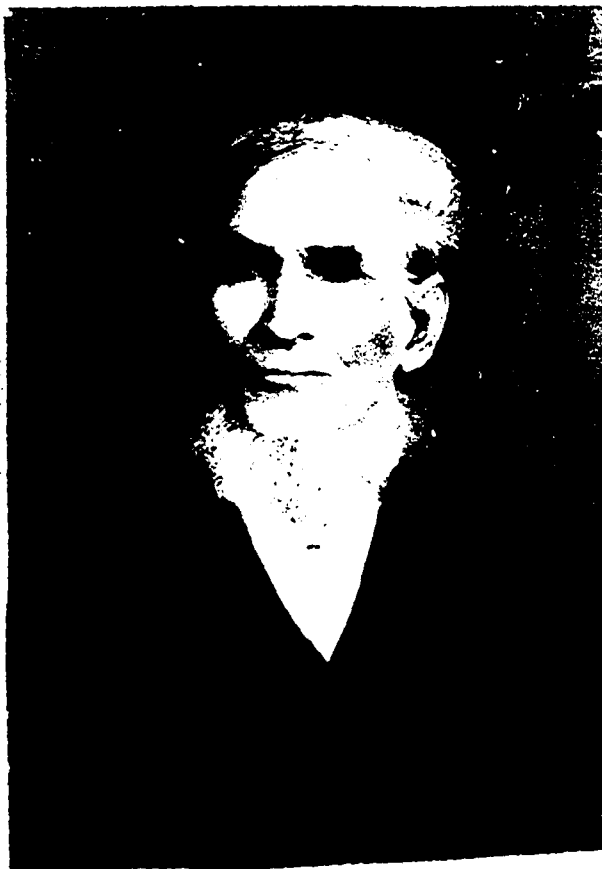
No history of the Ford Family has ever been written, and it required years of labor to hunt up its various branches, scattered all over the United States and its Territories.

The hand that writes this is feeble with age, and is unable to carry the work further.

THE AUTHOR.

*Wabash. Oct. 1st, 1889.*





*James Ford*





*America Ford.*

\* The Traditional History will be found in Appendix No. 1.





# A HISTORY OF THE FORD FAMILY

## GENEALOGY

### HENRY FORD.\*

(MY GRANDFATHER.)

Henry Ford settled on the north bank of the Potomac River, a few miles from Hagerstown, Maryland, at a place known to this day as "Ford's Bend." Ford had purchased this land, possibly, of some of Cecilius Calvert's agents, had built a house and some Negro quarters (for he owned slaves) and had cleared a few acres of land before the Revolutionary War broke out—1775. This was a frontier settlement; the Indians were still in that country, and troublesome.

Before this time he had seven children born to him, namely:

NAMES		BIRTHS	DEATHS	REMARKS
1	James Ford	July 30, 1771	March 17, 1819	.....Richland Co., Ohio
2	Hannah "	1773	1829	.....Indiana Territory
3	Hugh "	Jan'y 5, 1775	Jan'y 28, 1859	.....Licking Co., Ohio
4	Hester "	1777	1822	.....Richland Co., Ohio
5	John "	1778	1818	.....At New Orleans, La
6	Robert "	April 4, 1780	Nov. 15, 1865	.....Piano Station, Ill
7	Henry "	1782	1814	.....Cadiz, Ohio

After father's death, Grandmother, Rachel Ford, lived in our family till April 17, 1822. I was old enough to remember what she told me about our family, and the history above and what follows I learned from her.

\* The Traditional History will be found in Appendix No. 1.

Near the close of the Revolutionary War, probably in the year 1782, the people were driven in fort at Hagerstown, Maryland. A small reconnoitering party was sent on the south side of the adjacent mountain; the Indians saw them coming, and ambushed them: when in striking distance, with deliberate aim they fired. The soldiers were all killed, but three, and they were wounded; the wounded men returned the fire, and each brought down his "Ingin:" no time was given to re-load, but, hand-to-hand, with clubbed guns and tomahawks, the battle raged furiously. The weakened men soon succumbed, and the scalping knife was applied before life was extinct. All this occurred within sight and hearing distance of the fort. The Indians were in a great hurry to get away, leaving their dead on the field.

The next morning a reconnoissance was made in force, and the situation was found as stated above, except that Henry Ford was not dead when he was scalped, but had crawled on his hands and knees some thirty rods from the place where he had first fallen; and judging from the way the leaves had been torn up, and from the amount of blood spilled, his enemy had been badly wounded or roughly handled: both their guns, broken and bent, were left on the field. Thus Henry Ford and his brother-in-law, Harlin, gave up their lives as the price of British gold, to save the country we now enjoy. This is the history of this transaction, as given me by my Grandmother Ford:

About the year 1778, Ford, being opposed to the institution of Slavery, manumitted all his slaves except an old woman, too old to work, who refused to accept of freedom; but after his death she was sold by the authorities.

Henry Ford's sister Mary had married a Mr. Harlin, mentioned above, by whom she had a number of small children: two boys and three girls. Harlin was dead, Ford was dead, their houses burned, their property destroyed; and, penniless, their wives were left in a great strait. So many men had been killed, and such great loss of life had obtained in the army, that there were not men.

enough left to raise supplies for the people. Under these discouraging conditions the widows Ford and Harlin threw their interests together and moved to the Ford farm. Mrs. Harlin, not being a stout woman, took charge of the children, the kitchen, the spinning, the weaving, and all other duties pertaining to her department; while Mrs. Ford took the responsibility of clearing the land, raising and gathering the crops, and all other labor belonging to the husbandry of that day. Her oldest son, James, was eleven or twelve years old, and was of some help to her. Harlin's children, as yet, were too young to be of much help to them.

Thus, by strong wills and an indomitable perseverance, they succeeded in raising their families to habits of industry, to respectability and usefulness.

Rachel Ford could wield an axe with as much precision and skill as any wood chopper.

This short history is written for the benefit of their posterity, that they may know and realize what this great and glorious country cost its founders. Their labors and privations were far-reaching and better than they knew; but we, their children's children, can appreciate and honor them by preserving and transmitting this great "Inheritance" to their posterity, pure and unsullied by the Demagogue or Disloyalist. This we will do! Deo volente.

Glorious women! I love them; I would put the ballot in their hands.

Henry Ford was described by his wife, in her laconic style, as a "Peaceable man;" a "Temperate man;" and he was "Smart too;" "It took a lawyer to beat him in an argument;" he was a "Good provider" for his family. He was "Looked up to by everybody." "He feared nothing, and he would be living yet if it were not for them Red-coats;" "I did not blame the 'Ingins' so much, but them British! I never can get over that. I ran up all my pewter spoons and tankards to make bullets to kill them with, and some of 'em did bite the ground before they got away;

but Jimmy,' (meaning the writer) "it is all over now, and I reckon it was for the best."

I asked her who her husband looked like? She answered—

"Why, your daddy and Henry" (her husband) "are as much alike as two peas; and they act alike, too." "Billy" (my brother William) "is just like 'em."

Thus, this old lady would talk to me for hours, about her early life, and the great events of that period; but it must not be forgotten that there was a bright side to this picture, as well as a dark one, which cannot be given in this short sketch.

Mrs. Ford's maiden name was Rachel Gillan. Of her family we know almost nothing; only that her parents were Irish. She was related to the Johnsons of Kentucky and Tennessee. I have often heard her talk of Richard M. Johnson, and it was she that named "William Johnson Ford." She claimed R. M. Johnson's father as her uncle.

While the Ford family were in fort at Hagerstown, the Indians burned their house, with all its contents. The records being destroyed, she did not know her own age; but she must have been well up in seventy (seventy-six, probably) when she died. [She was born in the year 1746.] After her children had attained maturity, married and settled, she made her home with her oldest son, James, until his decease, March 17th, 1819; but she continued in the family until she died, April 17th, 1823. She was buried on the right side of her son James, on Section 16, in Mifflin Township, Richland County, Ohio. Senile consumption was the immediate cause of her death.

#### DESCRIPTION.

Mrs. Ford was rather tall, probably five feet five inches. Eyes gray, hair dark, had been heavily set; muscular, but not fat; fair complexion; temperament, when I knew her, sanguine-nervous—had been sanguine-bilious when young. Her muscles, though now much attenuated, had been well developed. She had a good command of language for a woman without an education; in rep-

artee, quick and incisive. Was superstitious, like most people of that day, believing in ghosts, witches, evil spirits and fortune telling. She was very kind and sympathetic, especially to those in distress. When I knew her she did not belong to any religious body, but was Protestant in principle.

During her last years she suffered much from general debility and cough. She would not have a physician's prescription made for her, but made her own, one of which is recollected: It was a decoction of the fresh root of Skunk Cabbage [*Synlocarpus Fatidus*]. Winter and summer I had to hunt and dig it for her. This was used to allay and ease the cough, which it did in an eminent degree. This intimacy with the old lady put me in possession of much of the family history that will be found on these pages.

Years after she had passed away, in talking with my mother and other members of the family, their statements corroborated hers in every particular; hence I believe they are entirely correct. If great events make great men, certainly great need made her a great woman; for it put in action all her faculties, both mental and physical. \*

---

\* Our "Traditional History" will be given in the Appendix.

NOTE—The pronoun I is used in these pages, instead of HE. How can a man speak of himself and use the word he?

GROUP I.  
HISTORY OF  
JAMES FORD, ELDEST SON OF HENRY FORD.  
(MY FATHER.)

---

James Ford was born on the 30th day of July, 1771, on the north bank of the Potomac River, now Washington County, Maryland, a few miles below Hagerstown, on a farm owned by his father in the bend of the river. Here, after his father's death, he labored with his mother on the farm until he was about eighteen years old. Up to this time he had no education, except what he had "picked up" of his own accord; but his continuous out-door labor, mountain air and sunshine, had secured to him a splendid physical form: his height was about five feet eight inches, weight one hundred and sixty pounds, complexion light, hair light, eyes hazel, skin fair—somewhat freckled, temperament very active, brain large \* and well developed: was not very quick motioned, but remarkably stout. William J. Ford, his son, may be regarded as the best type of him among all his children.

At that time men prided themselves upon their physical strength; their environment demanded it, and they were educated to it. When a dispute arose between two men, it was usually settled then and there—not with pistol, not with bowie knife nor shillalah, but with the *fist*. If one man called another a *liar*, it was answered immediately by a "*knock-down*." This ended the dispute; there was no appeal to the courts. Men stood more upon their honor than they now do. If a man agreed to perform a

---

\*This I know, for after I grew up to manhood his hat was 7 $\frac{3}{4}$ —and too large for me.

certain amount of labor in a given time, he did it; there were no excuses allowable except sickness or death; no false swearing, no stuffing of ballot boxes, no altering of tally sheets, no bribery at elections, occurred: the man that would do such a thing would have been hooted out of society by both political parties; public opinion ruled. The old Latin aphorism "*Vox populi vox Dei*," was true then—the voice of the people was the voice of God, because it was correct: it was true; but now, by deception and rascality, it is a shame, it is rather the voice of the devil.

This description is given that the reader may have a knowledge of the state of society at this juncture.

I never knew my father to have a quarrel or fight with a neighbor, yet he had much to do with men.

About the year 1783 Rachel Ford sold their farm in Maryland and moved to Brook County, now West Virginia. They settled near West Liberty and lived there until they moved to the State of Ohio [1802]. James Ford, the oldest son of Rachel Ford, had now arrived at that period of life which enabled him to see that an education was indispensable; that "knowledge was power," and that "The shackles of priestcraft, superstition, and error, were based on ignorance." There were no schools in the neighborhood nearer than Wheeling, Virginia, four miles away; yet, thither, for six months he made his daily trips back and forth, sometimes on foot, sometimes on horseback, at other times by boat on the Ohio River. I suppose he had some knowledge of orthography and reading before he started to this school, but spelling, reading, writing, and arithmetic, were the branches usually taught at that day in common schools: geography, grammar, history, were not: dictionaries were not used; the reading book was the Bible or New Testament.

At this time a "Presbyterian Divine" lived in the neighborhood, who took some interest in the "Boy's ambition," and proposed to assist him, in furnishing him suitable books; this was gladly accepted, for Mr. Finney had a good library for that time, but it consisted principally of classical and theological works: books

not appreciated then nor yet by young students of his age. The first book he got was a Digest of Calvinism, a subject too profound for him; he did not understand the language, nor many words he had never heard before, and was told that he must get a dictionary. The nearest bookstore was in Philadelphia, but he procured his "Key to the English Language" in "Sheridan's Dictionary." Thus equipped, he dived into the "Philosophy of the Unknown," but his "Key" could not help him out of the labyrinth of "Original Sin" which he was taught that "God was pleased to permit" and hence the subjects thereof "Malleable to the pains of hell forever." Then came, also, Foreordination, or Predestination, which ran thus: "By the decree of God some men and angels are predestined to everlasting life, and others foreordained to everlasting death." Their number is so certain and definite, that "It cannot be either increased or diminished;" and that, too, before they were born. Then the logical sequence was, that God could *not* prevent it, or that he took pleasure in creating him for eternal punishment.

It is stated that "One half of the human family die in infancy, but they were guilty of Adam's original sin (?);" yet they had no will in the premises. They had committed no overt act, good or bad, yet there was no remedy—they were sinners; consequently, doomed to eternal punishment.

The book was read, it may be supposed, with considerable care and some thought. Mr. Finney enquired how he liked the book? The boy answered—

"It is a good book, but there is a great deal of it I could not understand."

"What?"

"What is said about 'Original Sin,' 'Foreordination,' and 'Predestination.' I could not fix it."

He was told in short, that he had "No right to call in question those things," for they were "The inscrutable decrees of God;" "When God speaks, man should be silent."



This rebuke was a stumbling block in his path for many years. It came very near driving him into infidelity, but he finally settled down in the doctrine of the final holiness and happiness of all men, or the ultimate annihilation of the whole race; that the doctrine he had been taught "Was a dishonor to God and made him a savage monster."

"Hosea Ballou's Treatise on the Atonement" fixed his religious principles for life: he firmly believed that the Scriptures were inspired and true; that man is punished in the body for the sins committed in the body; that the atonement made by Christ is full and complete; that all men would be constrained to confess that Jesus was the Christ "To the glory of God the Father."

*He held that children, though made subject to death, were made alive through the death of Christ; "For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall we be made alive."—Cor. xv, 22. Thus, the child itself not being capable of sin, Christ having removed original sin, no transgression could be imputed to it; consequently, it stood justified before its maker.*

Holding these principles, no man was more conscientious about wrong-doing than he.

In politics he was a liberal Jeffersonian Democrat; and, like him, he said, touching the subject of Slavery: "I tremble for my country when I remember that God is just!"

#### HIS MARRIAGE

By this time his brothers and sisters were able to care for themselves. He was now over twenty-six years of age, and on the twenty-sixth day of January, 1796, he was married to Rebecca Snedeker, also of Brook county, now West Virginia. James Ford lived on the home farm until after 1800; between this date and 1802, he moved to Jefferson county, Ohio. Here he bought a Section of land, upon a part of which Cadiz, the county seat of Harrison county, is built. Here he cleared up a farm and built a grist mill on Ninevah creek. About this time the question came up of dividing Jefferson county. On this question he was elected

to the Legislature, in the year 1811, which, at that time, met at Zanesville, Ohio. He introduced a Bill to divide Jefferson county, which passed in both Houses of the State Legislature, and Harrison county was struck off the west side of Jefferson, and Cadiz became the county seat. Here the writer was born, while his father was in the Legislature.

Not being satisfied with his mill, the stream being too small, he sold out and moved to Richland county, Ohio, in 1815, and built another mill on the Rocky Fork of Mohican, five miles east of Mansfield. This mill he completed. Being skilled in the use of tools, he did much of the work himself. Accidentally he fell through between the joists into the cog-pit, and fractured two of his ribs on the left side. Splinters [spiculæ] of the fractured bones punctured the lungs, causing an abscess which never healed, and from which, about one year after—March 17th, 1819—he died. He was buried on Section 16, Miflin township, Richland county, Ohio, known as Cogle's Grave Yard.

James Ford had great mechanical skill in working in wood. When he died he left a good set of carpenter's and millwright's tools, which I found of great use to me: they enabled me to learn their use, and, doubtless, kept me often out of worse employment.

#### AN ANECDOTE.

A German whose name was "Haversock," was in the habit of going to Cadiz on Saturday and getting intoxicated; but, if he went home in this condition, his wife, being a spirited woman, made his environment too uncomfortable for him; thus, he was in the habit of crawling into Ford's hay mow, to sleep off his "drunk" before he went home.

It was now the fall of the year, and the nights had lengthened, when Charles Young, who was father's brother-in-law, and his wife came to spend the evening with Ford in a social chat. Young saw Haversock go into the barn, and understood his purpose. By a previous arrangement, each armed himself with a heavy finger stone; then they climbed up, one to each gable, on

the outside, when the following questions and answers were heard; during this interval Haversock was soundly asleep; Ford gave three heavy raps on the shingles—this awoke him; presently three more raps came from Young. A voice in deep, solemn tone, enquired:

*Question:* "Whence comest thou?"

*Answer:* "I lately came from Hell!"

*Q.:* "How long wilt thou stay?"

*A.:* "Until I take old Haversock away!"

"Mein Gott in himmel!" \* he exclaimed, as he jumped hatless from the mow to the ground, and ran for life.

The evening was dark, and he took to the woods; and when he reached home his clothes were badly torn, his skin lacerated, his face covered with blood; and, breathless, he exclaimed: "Die Teufel!" The Devil, was all he could say.

This incident made a deep and lasting impression on Haversock's brain and nervous system, so great that he never got drunk afterward. Ford and Young, seeing the good effects of their joke, never divulged the secret. In passing, I desire to make a remark not exactly apropos to the subject, but it is at least a good suggestion, i. e.: Never scare a child; it will never get over it, even if it afterwards learns that there was nothing in it; the effect remains, all the same. This applies, also, to domestic animals.

My father had but one fault, and it was a bad one—tobacco chewing. He was dyspeptic; I feel pretty sure this habit was the cause of it.

I have practiced medicine now over fifty years, and must say that tobacco was the cause of dyspepsia in at least forty per cent. of all of them in the male sex, and, perhaps, as many among the females.

---

\* My God in heaven.

## REBECCA FORD [SNEDEKER].

(MY MOTHER)

Before the War of 1776, the Snedeker Family, my great grandparents, moved to what was afterwards London county, Virginia. Here, on the third day of January, 1780, Rebecca Snedeker was born; here she lived in a German neighborhood until she was thirteen or fourteen years old; here her father, being financially ruined by the sudden depreciation in value of the Continental money, concluded to move to Brook county, Virginia, where land was cheap and there hew out another farm: This he did. Rebecca, up to this time, had never spent a day in an English school nor could she speak the English language, but their neighbors were Americans; her father, mother, and brothers understood the language, and adopted it in the family. Thus, in a short time, she and her brother, George, acquired the language, and had the rare privilege of attending an English school for three months. During this interval she learned to spell and read, and took some lessons in writing. In the two former studies she succeeded well; but in the latter, for the want of more practice, she failed. Pens, at that day, were made of goose-quills, which required a sharp knife and skill to make a good pen: in this, females generally failed, consequently there were few good writers among them.

Outside of the home circle there were few manufactories in the country. Garret Snedeker tanned his own leather, manufactured his family's shoes, raised wool and flax, rotted, broke and scutched the latter and made them ready for the spinning wheel: then his wife and daughters carded the wool by hand and spun it into yarn: the flax they hatched and spun into thread: these they dyed red, blue, black, or green, to suit their fancy: then they wove it into cloth, single or mixed, linsey or linen. From these fabrics all wearing apparel was cut and made, both for summer and winter. From these two textiles all finery in use at that day, and long after, were manufactured under the parental roof.

This brief history is given to show the mode of living, the perseverance, the energy and skill, necessary to make life tolerable at this juncture. Yet the people were contented with their lot, hence happier than they are to-day. Years of skilled training were required to train men and women for the many duties of life, yet they got it and were able to impart it to others.

Under this auspicious (?) training Rebecca grew into womanhood. Hard and constant labor seemed to be the proper hygienic condition for full development, at least in her case. At sixteen she was a full-grown woman, and was married in her seventeenth year to James Ford, on the twenty-sixth day of January, 1796, at her father's house, in Brook county, Virginia.

She kept her wedding suit until I was sixteen years old, and on her wedding anniversary her children had her dressed up in it. I will describe her and it, as I recollect them:

Her person was about five feet five inches high; weight, say, one hundred and forty-five pounds; complexion light, eyes gray, hair auburn or dark, face full and round, cheeks red, teeth rather small but perfect and white. She had never worn a corset and her waist was as nature had designed it. In short, I think she was a beautiful woman. She had a bland countenance, was retired in manner and slow to anger; not loquacious, but firm in what she conceived to be proper and right. With her neighbors she was sympathetic and obliging, and never abandoned a worthy friend.

The petticoat and short gown were the foundation of female attire in the year 1796. Fashions did not change then every three months, as they now do, but the trimmings did, in style and texture. Frills and tucks were common then; dresses gave a true outline of the body—no packing about the hips and shoulders was thought of.

Mother's wedding dress was made of light blue English broad cloth, trimmed about the neck and sleeves with white home-made linen lace. The skirt was separate from the body, and came up

close under the arms, and was suspended by shoulder straps. The body was made like a sailor's jacket, with a short, narrow skirt behind, and buttoned up before. Stockings were domestic, made of lamb's wool dyed red; the shoes were pumps. Her hair was wound into a knot on top of the head and fastened with a comb. This was necessary, for they wore hats in those days. Rebecca's was a felt beaver fur hat, dyed red, with a round crown, a very broad rim, and ornamented with an ostrich feather. Her cloak was made of red English broadcloth, gathered close about the neck, with arm-holes but no sleeves. This whole outfit was made to suit the season—January. There were many other things belonging to her wardrobe that cannot be mentioned now.

The next day after the marriage she was mounted on a fine roan mare, equipped with saddle and bridle, and rode to her husband's infair. No carriages graced the roads in those days.

Rebecca's father gave her a fine "Setting out," for that day. Among other things, she got a fine "Side-saddle," a large quarto family Bible bound in calf, in which was and is kept the family record up to this day. It is in the family of her grandson, William Wallace Ford, of Wabash county, Indiana. One dozen dinner plates, two very large platters, two soup basins, six tankards with handles, all made of pewter.\* Queensware was not in use at that day.

\* \* \* \* \*

Here we turn to my mother's side of the ancestral line, to the time she was married to James Ford—January, 1796.

---

\* Pewter is made of tin, lead, copper and zinc; is a very durable alloy, and has the lustre of silver, but is more oxidizable.

## GARRET SNEDEKER.

(MY GRANDFATHER.)

Garret Snedeker was born February 7th, 1745, and died September 4th, 1826, aged 85 years and nine months. His parents emigrated from Holland when he was a child, or probably some time before, and settled in Long Island. The family tradition places the date of emigration to North America some time in the Sixteenth Century.

Their language was German, which their descendants continued to speak until about the year 1793. Their religion was Protestant (Lutheran). The original stock were artisans and farmers. Snedeker, by occupation, was a distiller, and was regarded as a skilled workman in the manufacture of fruit liquors, such as Holland gin, and apple brandy. I visited my uncle George who yet resided on the old homestead, in the year 1828. In the garret of the "Old house" was a hogshead, or butt, of apple brandy, yet more than half full, which, he stated, was "The last distillation that father had made; he became opposed to the use of liquor, though none of his boys ever drank to excess, and he quit the business some seventeen years ago" (1811).

Some time before the Revolutionary War, he moved from Long Island to London county, Virginia, and bought a farm in the valley of the Apalachian Mountains, not far from Frostsburg. Here my mother was born, January 3rd, 1780.

He was a soldier in the war of 1776—was at the battle of Brandywine, and many others; suffered many privations, but got home without any permanent injury. About the year 1795, he sold his farm and took his pay in Continental money, which, in a short time, was worthless. Although monetarily ruined by the country he had fought to free from British bondage, yet he was not wholly discouraged; but being a "Home-loving German," he resolved to go on the frontier, where land was cheap, and hew out another farm. With not less than eight children he moved to Brook county, West Virginia, and settled near West Liberty.

## ELIZABETH WYCOFF.

(MY GRANDMOTHER)

Elizabeth Wycoff was born October 27th, 1749, and died some time after her husband's death—date not given. The Wycoffs also emigrated from Holland, probably before the Snedekers came; and both families settled in the same neighborhood. This was a protestant German settlement; they brought their Minister with them and their religious services were conducted in the German language.

When Snedeker reached the proper age, he and Elizabeth Wycoff were married. From this union sprang the following children: Peter and Nicholas, settled in Belmont county, Ohio. Polly Glasener Snedeker, settled near Cadiz, Ohio; Jacob, settled in Ohio county, Virginia; John, settled near Ripley, Brown county, Ohio; George, lived and died on the old home farm in Brook county, Virginia. Rebecca's history is given in the preceding pages.

Thus the Ford and Snedeker families sprang from "*Patriots*" on all sides, and need not be ashamed of their record.



SUB-GROUP No. 1, OF GROUP I.

HENRY FORD. SON OF JAMES AND REBECCA FORD.

The history of Henry Ford, our Progenitor, is written in the preceding pages of this book, as far as known to the writer. Next, in ancestral line, is Henry, the oldest son of James and Rebecca Ford, who was born near West Liberty, in Brook county, Virginia, on the twentieth day of May, 1798, and died on the twenty-fourth day of May, 1814, and was buried at Cadiz, Harrison county, Ohio; aged sixteen years and four days.

He died of inflammation (meningial) of the brain. Dr. Thomas Campbell, Alexander's brother, attended him in his last sickness; he thought, up to the last day, that the "Child would recover." Elusive hope—the die was cast!

He had not sinned; atoning blood had covered Adam's transgression; therefore, he stood justified before his Maker.

*"Who shall weep when the righteous die?  
Who shall mourn when the good depart?"*

---

SUB-GROUP No. 2, OF GROUP I.

NICHOLAS FORD.

Nicholas Ford, the second son of James and Rebecca Ford, was born in Virginia, July twenty-sixth, 1800, and died on the twenty-sixth day of June, 1868, at the home of his son, Thomas Ford, two miles south of Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, and was buried beside his first wife, at Mansfield.

When a small boy he was bitten by a rattlesnake on his right wrist. He was some distance from the house when bitten, and

started home immediately, but soon turned blind and failed to reach the house; but was carried home by his older brother, Henry. A large slough formed on his wrist, and the physicians decided that the hand must come off in order to save his life. Next day, when they met to amputate his arm, he declared he "Would die first," and begged his father and mother to protect him. Their sympathies being aroused, they concluded not to have the operation performed then. The boy finally recovered, but the arm and hand were much smaller (atrophied) than the left; the wrist was bent inward, and nearly stiff, and the thumb lay nearly stiff in the palm; yet he had pretty good use of the hand—could handle the axe, and most other tools.

He got a common school education, and was by occupation a farmer.

Nicholas Ford's father died March 17th, 1819. He was now nineteen years old. His father had made a Will a short time before his death, leaving the property, chattel and real, in the family's hands, until James, the youngest, should reach his majority. The mill and a part of the farm were rented. Nicholas, by the direction and supervision of his mother, farmed the remainder. The few debts were soon paid from the proceeds of the farm. His father had prepared the materials for a new house, but it was never put up; the family continued to live in the old hewed-log house until the premises were sold. They were contented and happy.

Nicholas understood the management of a team, and succeeded well for an inexperienced farmer. He continued in this business up to about the year 1824 or -5; then the farm was sold, by order of Court, I suppose.

In the year 1823, he married Susan Chew. This lady was the daughter of William Chew, a Marylander, who owned a large farm in the neighborhood of the Ford family. The Chew family were industrious and respectable people. Ford's wife was industrious, even tempered and an excellent housekeeper. From

this marriage came five sons and two daughters. This wife, and James and William Washington, her two oldest sons, died on the 10th of September, in the year 1843. They all died on the ninth day after the attack. The physicians called it "Congestive Typhus Fever;" they could not modify or relieve it. This terrible calamity came so unexpectedly, that it completely prostrated him; he did not recover from it for four years. He put out the remaining children among relatives, and broke up housekeeping for some time. About the year 1847 he married Martha Jones, about whom I know nothing. She had one son, Arendo Ford, born May 26th, 1849. Some years after this event Martha Ford died. In the year 1856 Ford married Mariah Briggs, from Maine. By this union he had one son, Frank Ford, born on the 18th day of August, 1857.

The reader will now turn back to the year 1824, to the time when Nicholas got his distributive share of his father's estate. With this money he purchased a farm fourteen miles East of Mansfield, on Honey Creek. He lived here some five or six years, then sold it. In the sale of the homestead Ford's mother kept eighty acres of it, and afterwards sold it to her son, Nicholas, reserving the house and garden during her lifetime. This land was heavily timbered and hard to clear, but he soon made a nice farm of it. He was a very industrious man; even tempered, and generous to a fault. No man ever came to him for help and went away empty handed, if he were able to supply his wants.

In 1839, he sold this farm, and bought another three miles South of Mansfield, which was the last farm he owned.

Nicholas made a visit to Wabash in the Fall of 1841. He stayed but a short time; but the three brothers, Nicholas, William and James, together with the families of the two latter, made it a very pleasant meeting for the ten days following. Nicholas made another short visit in the year 1848; came again and spent the Winter of 1864 and -5, and returned in the Spring. In the Summer of that year he visited us again, bringing sister Mary Young with

him. This was the first family reunion that had occurred since the marriage of William J. Ford and Mary McGee, March, 1831.

Thirty-four years had come and gone. What startling events had transpired! The Mexican War (1846) had terminated in the capture of the Capital and the ceding to the United States of a large portion of her territory. The five years War of the Rebellion (1861-5) had taken place with the loss of 1,000,000 men to the North, and probably as many to the South. The South lost her Slaves, and every principle she fought for. May I ask, to whom belongs the responsibility of this terrible war? The vanquished refuse to answer; but we add, suggestively, from Watts:

"O! Their end, their dreadful end,  
Thy sanctuary taught me so!"

On the other hand, what wonderful, almost incomprehensible advancement in the Arts and Sciences; the vast improvements of the country and the increase of knowledge among the masses of the people, obtained; it is not equalled by any Nation on earth.

Although we had lost some of our loved ones, and health and constitution in others, yet we rejoiced, for the *Nation lived*; the people *were free*, and *prosperity visible* on every hand. Like Paul, "*We thanked God and took courage.*"

This reunion of two or three weeks, was, to say the least of it, a very enjoyable affair; it was an oasis in our lives, which we thought then would never occur again, and it never will. The writer is the last one of the Group.

#### NICHOLAS FORD'S FAMILY.

JAMES † Born October 15, 1824. Died September 10, 1843, of congestive typhus fever, on the ninth day of attack.

DORCAS † Born December 30, 1826. Died January 3, 1864, of consumption.

WILLIAM WASHINGTON † Born May 2, 1828. Died September 10, 1843, of typhus fever, on the ninth day of attack.

EZEKIEL \* Born September 1, 1831. Lives at Dublin, Washington county, Iowa.

ROBERT \* Born August 25, 1836. Lives at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio.

EMILY † Born October 14, 1838. Died of consumption.

THOMAS PERRY \* Born September 3, 1841. Lives at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio.

AREDO \* Second wife's child, born May 26, 1849. Lives in Illinois.

FRANK \* Third wife's child, born August 18, 1857. Lives at Hartland, Hamilton county, Kansas.

Why these innocent children, James and William Washington, should be cut off so suddenly in the morning of life, no one can answer. Why? We do not know. Our moral guides have told us, hitherto, that these were "*Special providences*," sent on us for our "*Sins*." Early in the Seventeenth Century the death-rate in London was 80 to each 1,000 of population. Later it was 50 to the 1,000; and now it is from 20 to 24 to the 1,000. The "*Laws of Hygiene*" have greatly reduced these special providences. We shall have to look to other causes for an answer to these questions. Disease, in its inception and progress, is, evidently, governed by "*Physical law*;" and is not left to chance. "*Life is a force*," but to us as yet, it is incomprehensible. Our duty, therefore, is to remove or destroy all contaminating agents, keep away from contagions, and avoid exposure. In short, live up to the rules of hygiene as now taught.

### DORCAS FORD.

Dorcas Ford, Nicholas' daughter, was born December 30, 1826, and died of Phthisis, January 3, 1864.

She grew to be a beautiful woman, skilled in all domestic affairs, and was married to Sylvester Jones, October 5th, 1844. From this family sprang: 1st, Martha Jane, born November 28th, 1846, and died July 16th, 1861. 2nd, Francis Layton, born July 5th, 1851, and died January 26th, 1854. 3rd, Ida, born January

† Dead.

\* Farmer.

17th, 1854, and died August 10th, 1870. 4th, Charles Eugene, born March 3rd, 1857, and lives at Lucas, Richland county, Ohio. 5th, Willard, born October 16th, 1859, and lives at Wichita, Kansas. Sylvester Jones, their father, was born in 1821, and died of phthisis, December 26th; 1861.

My knowledge of this family is very limited. I visited them in August, 1860. They owned a small farm and were good livers, and stood well in society. The oldest daughter then had phthisis. Charles married Flora Shambarger, April 23rd, 1879, and lives near Lucas, Richland county, Ohio. In the year 1883, Charles visited us. He is a fine specimen of the genus homo, a good talker, of an active temperament, and is sprightly. By occupation, a farmer.

### EZEKIEL FORD.

Ezekiel Ford, son of Nicholas, was born at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, on the 1st day of September, 1831. He was raised on his father's farm, and received a common school education. I know little, personally, of this nephew. I wrote to him in January, 1887, and received an answer, dated:

DUBLIN, WASHINGTON CO., IOWA, January 19th, 1887.

DR. JAMES FORD.

*Uncle:*

"I received your letter, and was glad to hear from you once more. In reply, will give you the record of father's family, and my own. \* \* \* After leaving Richland county, I first came to Iowa in the Fall of 1851. I returned to Mansfield, October 3rd, 1857, and was married to Ellen Jane White at Loudonville, Ashland county, Ohio. Then returned to Dublin, Washington county, Iowa, in January, 1858, where I have lived ever since. I am a carpenter by trade. These are my children:

CHARLES MARION, born September 15th, 1858.

JOSEPH BENTON, born October 28th, 1861.

EDWIN COULTER, born, September 17th, 1864.

ELLA (Stiles), born April 14th, 1867.

JOHN DERMIC, born July 18th, 1870; died March 13th, 1873.

THOMAS PERRY, born September 19th, 1873.

“Charles and Joseph went to Western Kansas in the Fall of '84, crossed the Kansas River and stopped at Spencerville, and were among the first to pre-empt, each, a quarter-section of land, in what is now known as Ford county, Ford (town) Kansas. Charles and Joseph follow farming, Edwin teaching.

“Ella Ford was married, September 2nd, 1885, to George Everet Stiles, of Washington, Washington county, Iowa, where she resides. [But Ezekiel's last letter states that ‘There has been some change in our family since writing to you last. Ella Stiles has moved to Kansas City, Missouri.’—THE AUTHOR.]

“Charles Benton came home the 20th of January, and remained until February 4th—inst. Then went to Illinois on the 10th and was married to Miss Minnie Bookwalter, of Gardner, Illinois, and then went off immediately to his home. His P. O. address is Ford, Ford county, Kansas.

“I visited the boys this Fall, and like their choice of places; and the looks of the Country.

“I hope you will live to finish your book, and would be very thankful for a copy.

“With best regards to all, I close.”

EZEKIEL M FORD.

## ROBERT FORD.

Robert Ford was born August 25th, 1836, and still lives. He was educated in the schools of the country, and was raised on his father's farm, near the place where he now lives. He owns a farm, and lives in his own domicile. He is esteemed as a good man and useful citizen. At the age of twenty-nine years, he married Rebecca Irwin, of the same neighborhood, April 17th, 1866. Ordinarily, he was a quiet, civil man, but could not brook an insult.

I wrote to him for his War record, and will give the reader his letter, just as he wrote it:

MANSFIELD, OHIO, March 6th, 1887.

DEAR UNCLE:

“I will give you the information you desire, to the best of my knowledge. I enlisted in Company C. R. S. Chamberlain, Captain, Harker Colonel, in the sixty-fourth Ohio, November 9th, 1861, at Buckingham Camp, where the Regiment was recruited and organized.

“About the middle of December the Regiment was moved to Cincinnati by rail, and from thence, by steam, to Louisville, Kentucky. On December 26th we left Louisville and marched to Bardstown, Kentucky, and were brigaded there; we then moved to Danville and Hall Gap. Here the Regiment was employed in building corduroy roads, to facilitate the movement of supplies to Gen. Thomas’ forces at Summerville, Kentucky. After the battle of Mill Springs, the Regiment was ordered to Bowling Green, and from there to Nashville, Tennessee.

“The Regiment participated in the following battles: Pittsburg Landing, April 9th. Gen. Garfield, late President of the United States, commanded the Brigade. Afterward it took part in the movement and siege of Corinth; also, in the skirmish at Mumfordsville and the battle of Stone River. The Regiment was closely engaged at the battle of Chickamauga, losing about 100 in killed and wounded. The siege of Knoxville being raised, it returned to Chattanooga, January 3rd, ’64; here we were furloughed for thirty days, and returned to Mansfield, where we were warmly welcomed by the citizens, who gave us a grand reception in Miller’s hall.

“On the 14th of March the Regiment again left Mansfield, and arrived at Chattanooga April 1st, ’64. On the 3rd of April the Regiment with its Brigade, took part in the charge of Rocky Ridge.” [It was also in the battles of Resaca, Peachtree Creek, Atlanta, and Franklin.—THE AUTHOR.] “My time being out, I



was discharged at Nashville, Tennessee, on the 10th day of December, '64.

"I was wounded at breakfast time in front of Chattanooga, by a spent shell, breaking my skull. I lay insensible for three days and nights, and remained in hospital one month. I am drawing a pension of four dollars a month. \* \* "

Here is a man, who served his country well, was in eleven battles, some of which were the hardest fought battles of the war; had his skull broken and has been an invalid ever since; but his government is paying him for all this service and his broken skull, all of four dollars a month! Comment is useless!

Robert's children are:

GEORGE W., born March 4th, 1867, and is living at his father's home.

MARY EMMA, born May 6th, 1869, is living at home with her parents.

CHARLES, born October 19th, 1871, and died April 5th, 1872.

I received a letter from George Ford, dated at Mansfield, Ohio, March 6th, 1887, which runs thus;

DEAR UNCLE:

"How are the chances for a young man, in the line of a clerk or book-keeper? I do not like farming, and if I could get a position somewhere, I would be very thankful. If you should happen to know of such a position, I would gladly come to Wabash to work. I can come well recommended, and am not so particular about pay, as I want experience. I have studied book-keeping for the last six months, and have it mastered completely."

Respectfully,

GEORGE FORD.

## THOMAS PERRY FORD.

Thomas P. Ford, Nicholas' son, was born September 3rd, 1841, at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, where he still lives.

He was trained to habits of industry on his father's farm, educated in the schools of the country, and was a quiet, industrious boy. After reaching maturity he married Miss Mary A. Mountain, an English lady, September 19th, 1865, by whom he has had no children. He is now in poor health (incipient consumption) and unable to do much labor. He owns a small, but rich farm, close to Mansfield, and follows raising small fruits, and gardening. He writes:

MANSFIELD, OHIO, March 29, 1887.

DEAR UNCLE:

“We received your kind letter; was glad to hear from you. \* \* You ask for my War record:

“I enlisted, December 11th, 1861, in the First Independent Ohio Battery, and served till June 27th, 1865, and was then discharged. I was in seventeen battles, and was twice wounded slightly. Some of them were: South Mountain, Antietam, Lexington, Lynchburg, Winchester, Martinsburg, Frederick City, Bunker Hill, etc.

“I have poor health, am troubled with neuralgia and lung-trouble, since last October; do but little work. I live where I did when you were here.”

I met this nephew at Columbus, Ohio, on the 13th of September, 1888, at the Soldiers' Reunion: he was then marching at the head of a column of soldiers from Mansfield, as a Major. He was a fine appearing officer, and seemed to understand his duty thoroughly. Being on duty, I had no opportunity to talk with him, but marched for miles by his side and often in his way; but finally gave out, fell out of rank, and was not able to find him after that, though I spent one day in hunting for him. No one of his brothers resembles his father so much as he.

## EMILY FORD.

Emily, Nicholas Ford's youngest daughter, was born October 14th, 1838.

She was raised on her father's farm, and educated as the other members of the family were. When a full grown woman, she married Andrew Schlusser, of the same neighborhood. I visited them in the year 1860 and found Emily a beautiful woman—retiring in manner, affable and very pleasant. Everything about her house was as neat and well arranged as it could be. These habits she had learned from her mother. She has one daughter, Emily, living. This daughter married John Price, and they have one child, named Jesse. Postoffice, Nevada, Ohio.

## ARENDO FORD.

Arendo Ford, son of Nicholas Ford, by his second wife, Martha Jones, was born at Mansfield, Ohio, May 26th, 1849. He lived and labored on the farm until he was probably sixteen or seventeen years old, was taught in the schools of the neighborhood, and was a sprightly youth. I visited his father's family one week in the year 1860. At that time he seemed spiritless and taciturn. His half-brother informed me that "His step-mother abused the boy and had worried the life out of him." From this cause he ran off, went to Columbus, Ohio, and enlisted in the regular U. S. Army: served five years under General Custer and then got an honorable discharge. After this he returned to S. Louis, Missouri, and learned the moulding business in a foundry, and at length married the proprietor's daughter, by whom he had several children. He lived, thirteen years ago, twelve miles west of Springfield, Illinois. He visited us at that date, but we have heard nothing of him since. Postoffice address unknown.

He resembled his father in appearance: was strictly temperate, industrious, and agreeable in manner.

## FRANK FORD.

Frank Ford, Nicholas Ford's only child by his last wife, was born August 18th, 1849, at Mansfield, Ohio. He grew up on the farm, and was a bright boy. He qualified himself for a school teacher. He visited us in the spring of 1881, and stayed about one year. Soon after this he returned to his mother, living at Bellville, Richland county, Ohio. He was moral, temperate, and trusty; had a fine deportment, was industrious, and possessed all the elements for successful life. He now lives at Hartland, Hamilton county, Kansas. Of his mother, I know nothing.

---

## SUB-GROUP No. 3, OF GROUP I.

## MARY FORD.

Mary Ford, only daughter of James and Rebecca Ford, was born in Jefferson—since Harrison—county, on the Ford farm, on the first day of September, 1802, and died at Columbus, Ohio, September 21st, 1875. Mary was born and raised at a period when nearly all wearing apparel was made by hand at home, and wove in the neighborhood. An Irish weaver settled near her home, and had a ten-hundred reed. Mary spun fine flax and made twenty yards of "Ten-hundred linen," the first, and probably the last that was ever made in that county. It was spread upon the lawn to bleach. A mischievous colt two years old, jumped into the yard, wearing a yoke with a hook on the end of it, and walked across the web. The hook caught it about the middle. The linen moved, greatly alarming the colt; it leaped the fence, ran around the orchard several times, got tangled in the linen, fell down and struggled for life, but could not free itself from the web. No man was near, but her mother loosed it from the colt. It was very muddy and green from the grass. but, by its wonderful strength, not a thread was broken nor a rent made in it. When that was

ascertained. Mary laughed for joy, with the tears running down her pallid cheeks. I can see her yet, as she then appeared.

Mary walked, during her last school year, two miles through an unbroken forest on a path blazed out on the trees, to and from school night and morning for six months. She was a good reader, wrote a nice copy hand and was regarded as a good scholar for that day. She weighed about one hundred and forty pounds, was light complexioned; had a full, round face, red cheeks, eyes dark, hair light, or auburn: was retired in manner, and had a low, sweet voice. She was regarded in the neighborhood where she lived as a "Beautiful Woman."

About this period ladies wore their hair around the forehead, put up in curls and fastened with pins. Mary had, also, a new straw (Dunstable) bonnet, which had just come in fashion; thus attired, she and her brother Nicholas went to Mansfield to the M. E. Quarterly Meeting. The preacher delivered a discourse on "Pride" and various other disconnected topics; for he was an ignorant man, had no education, and his zeal seemed to supply the lack of sense. He pointed out Mary, who was an artless, bashful girl, as a specimen of "*Pride*" and ostentation. He went down the aisle where she sat, pulled off her bonnet and called on the congregation to "Look at her!" Then he began pulling down her curls. Instantly her brother, Nicholas, was at her side—pushed away the impudent preacher and led his sister out. She was so mortified and chagrined at this vulgar proceeding, together with the strain made upon the brain and nervous system, that she never would go to that church again. This affair did not stop here. The preacher tried to have Nicholas prosecuted for disturbing the meeting, but he was informed by the people that "Ford ought to have knocked him down and kicked him after he was down." The Magistrate said—

"You are liable to prosecution for assault and battery on the girl."

This indignity gave the girl unpleasant notoriety, and him disgrace. The sympathy of all the people outside of the church, and

many in it, was with the girl. This incident in Mary's life illustrates the difference between that period and this. Fashions do change, even in churches; but this incident was a dark spot in her mind as long as she lived.

She was a fine singer, and had a strong but mellow voice, as the writer recollects; she had good command of it, and kept excellent time. Fugue tunes were in vogue then, and accurate time was indispensable.

After Mary had completed her school course, she taught a summer school in her neighborhood. Her pupils were nearly all misses, many of them in their 'teens. The school house had neither floor nor loft; the door was made of clapboards, the windows were cracks left between the logs and covered with greased paper; as yet, no lumber mills were in the country. Yet pupils accomplished more in study than they do now. Eight hours were put in in actual study, and fewer branches were taught. The "Cramming" process had not yet obtained. This course enabled the physical system to keep pace with the brain-development, thus the pupils grew up with a normal balance between brain and muscle, resulting in perfect development of all parts of the system, and the resultant was good health.

In the Fall of 1823, Mary Ford was married to David Young, then of Wellsburg, Brook county, Virginia. Charles Young father of David, had married Hester Ford, and was James Ford's brother-in-law; consequently, Mary and David were first cousins. Both the Young and Ford families advised against this match, but the contracting parties were of age and no one had a right to oppose it. Young had brought a carriage with him, and a few days after the wedding David and his wife left for their home in Virginia, one hundred and thirty miles away. This affair made a break in our family that we felt severely, especially so with the writer.

From this date, the history of David Young, and Mary, his wife, will be given together. Much of Young's history will be

found in the biography of William J. Ford, which see. Of Young's early history the writer knows nothing.

David Young was born April 7th, 1795, and died April 19th, 1863. The following children sprang from this marriage.

CLARISSA HESTER Born October 27th, 1823. Died August 26th, 1862, and buried by the side of her father.

WILLIAM FORD. Born November 5th, 1825. Is now living at Windom, McPherson county, Kansas.

JAMES RASSELAS. Born April 7th, 1828. Died near Wyandotte, Kansas, March 22, 1880.

DAVID GLADDEN }  
Twins } Born June 10th, 1830, Mary died June 30th,  
MARY JANE }

1830. David died on the Atlantic Ocean, August 12th, 1865, during the War, and was buried at sea.

SELINA (Nudd). Born February 11th, 1832. Lives at Columbus, Ohio, No. 548 High street.

ELIZABETH. Born October 27th, 1833. Married Marcus McDermott August 30, 1855. Died October 6th, 1860.

ELZY HENRY. Born February 1st, 1835. Died April 11, 1859, and was buried beside his father, on Section 16, Richland county, Ohio.

SALATHIEL CURTIS. Born October 18th, 1836. lives in Shelton, Mason County, Washington Territory.

LOUISA Born April 15th, 1838. Died February 5th, 1870, and buried beside her father.

SYLVANUS DAY. Born January 19th, 1840. Died September 21st, 1872. Has a wife and one daughter living at San Bernardino, California.

SAMANTHA RACHEL. Born May 8th, 1842. Died August 29th, 1864.

FRANCIS MARION. Born March 8th, 1844. Died October 27th, 1873, and buried at Mansfield, Ohio.

David Young was a smith—an edge-tool maker. He and his wife made us a visit at Mansfield, Ohio, in the year 1824. While

there he purchased the mill and one hundred and fifty acres of the homestead farm, and moved to it in the year 1825. A new mill was built, the farm enlarged and improved, a new barn erected, fences repaired, and all other necessary improvements made. The writer, skilled in the use of tools, helped to perform much of this work. This farm took the premium for three successive years, at the county fair, as the best kept and best improved farm in Richland county. Equal energy and skill were put forth on the farm and in the house. Success in the former depended, largely, upon the latter. Mary was a skilled operator in domestic economy: was always cheerful and pleasant, and arranged all of her domestic affairs so that each came in regular succession on every day of the week. Thus, all the domestic duties of life for that week ended on Saturday evening. With her numerous family and various interests, any other course would have been a failure.

When the writer left Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, in the year 1833, Mary (Ford) Young and David Young, her husband, had five young children, and seven after that; consequently I knew very little about them. They all, however, reached maturity, and were raised on the old Ford homestead farm. All were educated in the stone school house near by, and were passably good English scholars. They all were high-spirited, temperate, and industrious. All had a taste for music, and all played on some instrument.

They took delight, both male and female, in making their home and its surroundings beautiful; yet they lacked *inhabiteness*. The boys scattered out—to Indiana, Missouri, Kansas, Oregon, and Washington Territory. They were patriotic, and assisted in putting down the Rebellion. Mechanical skill was natural to all of them, both male and female, which they utilized in after life in many directions. In politics, they were all Republicans, in religion, they were Protestant and liberal. They had no aspirations for political preferment, but were supporters of the man, who, in their judgment, would best subserve the public interest.



Consumption was hereditary in this family. The grandmother (Young) died of it, after bearing twelve children; but her son, David Young, lived to be sixty-eight years of age, and the mother of this family lived to the end of her seventy-third year; yet their children have died of it, except William F., Salina, and Salathiel who still live. According to the law governing hereditary diseases, their grandchildren will, under favorable circumstances, escape the disease.

The following are my sister's children by David Young:

#### CLARISSA HESTER YOUNG.

Clarissa, the oldest daughter, was born in Wellburg, Brook county, Virginia, October 27th, 1823, and died August 26th, 1862, and was buried in Section 16, Mifflin township, Richland county, Ohio. When fully grown, she married a man by the name of Chauncy Kellum. He was a large and fine appearing man, but was a trifling libertine, and worthless. When her father refused to support him longer, he left his wife. Fortunately they had no children.

#### WILLIAM FORD YOUNG.

William Ford Young was born at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, on November 5th, 1825. He was raised on his father's farm, and was a farmer. He moved to Kansas, and lives in Windom, McPherson county.

It was thought by Salina and Salathiel, that their brother was dead—did not know where he had lived; but through the postmasters I traced him to Windom, McPherson county, Kansas. I wrote to him, and received an answer; partly in his own words, I give it:

WINDOM, MCPHERSON CO., KAN., January 15th, 1889.

DR. JAMES FORD,

Wabash, Indiana.

“DEAR UNCLE:—Your letter of inquiry is received, and its contents noted. I am very glad to hear from you. This is the first letter I have had the pleasure of writing to you.

“My wife, Elizabeth Holmes, died twelve years ago, at Wheatland, this county. My children are all dead, except Charles, Lewis, and Nellie Adelia. We are now living in Windom, on the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fee Railroad. I have a home here worth \$2,500. I am a carpenter, and can stand work yet a while, well.”

He says—“I was married in Richland county, Ohio, on the 20th day of March, 1850.”

He had seven children; the oldest, Martin Luther, was born September 12th, 1852, and died June 4th, 1887, aged about 35, and may have had a family. The next four children were one son and three daughters, died in infancy. Charles Lewis Young was born March 10th, 1864, still lives. Nellie Adelia Young was born September 15th, 1870, and lives. William is a Republican, and loves his country.

### JAMES RASSELAS YOUNG.

James R. Young was born at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, April 7th, 1828, and died March 22nd, 1880, at Wyandotte, Kansas. He was raised and educated at the Ford homestead farm. At an early day he showed the skill, the tact, the ingenuity of the Ford stock, in working in wood and iron. His father, too, was a skilled workman in the latter.

When James reached his majority, he went into the foundry business; then married a lady in Knox county, Ohio, on December 10th, 1854. She states, in her letter just received:—

“In less than two years we lost all we had. This resulted from the depreciation of values; but he and his partners went into the business again at Terre Haute, and continued until the war broke out. (1861) when his father and mother sent for him to come home and take care of them, which he did, until his father's death; then he was appointed the executor of his father's Will, and settled up the estate.

"In October, 1866, he came to Kansas City, Missouri; in February he moved over to Wyandotte, Kansas, where he lived to the end of his days. He was sick of consumption for about two years, and desired to work, but failed.

"We persuaded him to go to Colorado"—the letter does not state how long he stayed, but says: "The trip did him good; he thought he was well, but shortly after his return he had to take treatment constantly to the last, without benefit. During the last two or three weeks of his life, he told me what I should do after his death.

"My maiden name was Elizabeth Cable; was born in Knox county, Ohio, February, 1836, and was married on the 10th day of December, 1854, to your nephew.

"I thank you for the kind interest you have shown to my children.

"I remain your sincere friend,"

ELIZABETH YOUNG.

#### Family record of James R. Young.

LOVZILLA. Born January 8th, 1856. Lives at Kansas City, Kansas.

GEORGE RASSELAS. Born November 1st, 1858. Died April 18th, 1879.

CHARLES GRANT. Born April 13rd, 1861. Died October 4th, 1878.

ZOIE ROZELLA. Born January 25th, 1864. Died February 10th, 1883.

WILLIAM SHERMAN. Born December 10th, 1866. Lives at Kansas City, Kansas.

JAMES EDWIN. Born March 5th, 1868. Lives at Kansas City, Kansas.

FRANK FORD. Born March 19th, 1870. Lives at Kansas City, Kansas.

DEMORANT RHULE. Born July 14th, 1872. Lives at Kansas City, Kansas.

CLARENCE. Born April 30th, 1874. Died July 18th, 1876.

In Mrs. Young's letter of February 4th, 1889, she says:—

"My oldest daughter, Lovzilla, married Mr. H. G. Root, by whom she has had three children, two boys and one girl." Names and ages not given.

"William Sherman, the next oldest son living, is by occupation a carpenter, and a contractor for house building.

"James Edwin is engaged in the furniture business at this time.

“Frank Ford is now engaged in a telegraph office as a book-keeper. I intend to send him to a business college next Fall. He is an expert with the pen.

“Demorest, the youngest, is now in school.”

Consumption, that fell destroyer of the human race, seems to be hereditary in this family.

Frank Ford Young says, in his letter of February 4th, 1889:—

“There are now five of us at home—mother, and four boys. We are doing well, financially, at present, and have a neat little home in the suburbs of Kansas City, Kansas, worth about three thousand five hundred dollars.”

In conclusion, I desire to say that, outside of the ties of consanguinity, James Young was an honest, industrious and peaceable man, and generous to a fault. Had he lived to manage his own property up to this date, he would be a very rich man.

#### DAVID GLADDEN YOUNG.

David G. was born on the old Ford homestead farm, June 10th, 1830, and died at sea August 12th, 1862.

He married a lady by the name of Mary Repp, by whom he had two children, Marion and Minnie. The mother is dead; Marion has gone to Washington Territory; Minnie is dead, and left two children whose names are unknown to me.

David G. Young enlisted and was mustered in the Twenty-first Regiment, Indiana Infantry; afterwards the First Heavy Artillery, at Indianapolis, Indiana, on the 12th day of August, 1863. His Captain's name was H. Christ, of Company L.\* He was taken sick in New Orleans, and died on his way to New York to be discharged, and was buried at sea.

He was a true patriot, a lovable man, who forsook father and mother, wife and children, and gave up his life for his country's good. Is there anything more noble than this? No! “He sleeps his last sleep, he has fought his last battle.” No flowers will decorate his grave; no Anthem will greet his ear; but silence will

\*See Adjutant General's Report of the State of Indiana, Vol. IV.

reign, until the slumber of death is broken. "When the mists have cleared away" he shall live again, and "Know as he is known, never more to walk alone," in a more glorious and better life.

### SALINA YOUNG [NUDD].

Salina was born on her father's farm near Mansfield, Ohio, on the 11th day of February, 1832, and was married to Benjamin Franklin Nudd, and is now living on High street, Columbus, Ohio. They have one son, William Harrison, born April 10th, 1856, married, and has two children.

Mrs. Nudd is fifty-six years old, and is in fine health for a lady of her age; the bloom of youth rests yet gently on her cheek. She is a beautiful woman, and is a fair type of the Ford family, modified by the Young blood. In deportment, affable and pleasant; is quick-spoken, and of a sanguine-bilious temperament.

Mr. B. F. Nudd is about fifty-six or fifty-seven years old, has an elegant physical form, and is a man of great perseverance. He is a railroad engineer, and is now finishing up his thirty-second year in this business. By his close inspection and good sense, he has never in all these years had an accident. They own real estate, their house is elegantly furnished, and they seem to be in easy circumstances.

### ELIZABETH YOUNG [McDERMOTT].

Elizabeth was born on the old homestead, October 27th, 1833, and died October 6th, 1860. She was married to Marcus McDermott, August 30th, 1855. They had born to them two children. Oliver, born January 5th, 1859, and died April 4th following. Elma, born September 27th, 1860.

Elizabeth's daughter Elma was married to a man whose name was Oliver Balliet, July 30th, 1881, and they have one child, Ida May, born May 11th, 1883. I know nothing of the history of Elizabeth Young; but the above history I got from her daughter, Elma Balliet, this year (1888). She lives at No. 47 East Market street, Mansfield, Ohio.

## ELZY HENRY YOUNG.

Elzy was born February 1st, 1835, and was buried April 11th, 1859, on Section 16, by the side of his brothers.

Nothing is known by me of his early history; but in the year 1856 or -7 he came to Wabash and spent the summer here. He was a carpenter by trade, and built a frame house for Mr. Spaw, the dentist. Then he studied dentistry with him and got an outfit of dentist's tools, and then left Wabash. While here he was strictly temperate, moral, and an industrious man; he kept respectable company, and made many friends.

## SALATHIEL CURTIS YOUNG.

Salathiel C. was born at Mansfield, Ohio, October 18th, 1836, and is now living at Shelton, Mason county, Washington Territory. I know nothing of his early life. He had worked in a machine shop, and understood the construction of steam engines and their practical workings. He had run a locomotive on the Hocking Valley railroad some seven years before he moved to Wabash, in the year 1875. He ran an engine on the Cincinnati, Wabash and Michigan railroad one year, and then returned to Columbus, Ohio. From there he moved to California. Here he was lost to us; we did not know what had become of him, and supposed him dead; but afterwards heard he had moved to Olympia, Washington Territory, years ago. I wrote to him, and this is his answer, in his own words, as he wrote it:

SHELTON, W. T., March 11th, 1888.

DR. JAMES FORD, AND FAMILY.

Wabash, Indiana.

"My dear Uncle, Aunt, and Cousins: It has been a great pleasure to myself and wife to hear from you, especially from one so aged; it makes us both feel as if we had lacked sociability towards you, those who ought not to be forgotten. But I will not offer an apology, as we are to blame for it all, and you know it is so. I hope you will overlook it, as we all get careless.

"It surprises me to hear of so many changes, as your letter is the first to us from Indiana for several years; it makes me homesick to see you all. Indeed, it would make my heart beat with joy if I could meet you all once more. I have often thought of you, and think I am the only nephew you have living, of David Young's family. I have not heard from William, my brother, in the past ten years; he then lived in McPherson county, Kansas, but his Postoffice I have forgotten.

"I left Columbus, Ohio, on the 20th day of March, 1876, for a climate more suitable to my health. I remained in California eighteen months, then I came to Olympia, Washington Territory, settled at Puget sound, and commenced driving a locomotive for the Olympia and Shelton Valley railroad, and was in their employ for five years and eight months; after that time I was employed with the Satsop Railroad Company at the town of Shelton. This Company is doing a large business; is running three locomotives, and putting into tidewater about 300,000 feet of lumber per day. They get for their lumber \$7.50 per M. I realize one hundred dollars per month, and my board: but it is very hard work.

"I have permanently settled in this place, and will be better fixed when my new house is completed. My family are all well, and, I must say, my health never was better since I was old enough to remember. There is at this time no sign of lung trouble. My children are all grown up to man- and womanhood. William is twenty, Carrie about nineteen, and my baby is now fourteen—on February 27th. Willie is living at Seattle. Carrie will be married this month. Baby, Mary, will be the only one left with us, pretty soon. My wife and I will be left alone, pretty soon, the same as you and my dear old aunt. I did have but one child, that I can call my own daughter. She was a babe when we lived in Wabash. William and Carrie were children of my wife's first husband, Mr. Martin; but we raised them, and now they can take care of themselves.

“This Puget Sound country is a very healthy country. Our Winters are very mild; hardly ever goes below zero, if at all only two or three days. Our Summers are not hot. If the thermometer goes up to 100 degrees F. it is very hot for us. This Puget Sound Basin is a heavily timbered country, principally fir and cedar.

“You tell me in your letter that you are writing a History of the Ford Family. I am sure I will be delighted to see it, and if I have any thing in my possession that will be of any help to you, I am ever ready to give it to you. I have the old Family Bible; it contains the births and deaths of nearly all the family. Please let me hear from you, and I will answer.

“My family join in, by sending love to all.

“Your Nephew,”

S. C. YOUNG.

I wrote to him again for a copy of the old Family Record. His answer is dated May 6th, 1888, and contains the desired information. A few extracts from this letter are given:—

“I do not think you would know me at all, as I have grown very gray in the last fifteen years, and look quite old; but I am not quite fifty, yet.” Of the town, he writes: “Shelton is a small town of about three hundred inhabitants, but it is building up very fast. It is the county seat, and will have another Log Road in operation this summer.”

### LOUISA YOUNG.

Louisa was born on her father's farm, April 15th, 1838, and died February 5th, 1870, and was buried by the side of her father on Section Sixteen, in Richland county, Ohio. She was married but it is not known to whom. She had no children.



## SYLVANUS DAY YOUNG.

Sylvanus Day was born near Mansfield, Ohio, January 19th, 1840, and died, and was buried at San Bernardino, California, September 21st, 1872.

I know nothing of this nephew's early history, only that he grew up to habits of industry, and was educated as the other members of the family were. I visited my relatives at Mansfield in June of the year 1860, and found Sylvanus hunting for a surgeon to cut away his in-grown toe-nails. I operated on him then and there. The matrix, that formed the nail, was also removed. This operation was a complete success. He had not walked for nearly one year. I never saw him after this visit. I advised him to go to California, and stay there, as he was hereditarily predisposed to consumption. He took my advice, but did not keep it long enough.

After his father died, 1863, he returned home; and after a short visit, he went back to Lathrop, Clinton county, Missouri. There he kept a furniture store. During this interval he married Miss J. Newland.

Two years after this marriage his health failed; then, leaving his wife in Missouri, he went to California again. After nine months, not getting any better, he sent for her, and died of consumption shortly after she arrived. His wife wrote me, and said:

"We were married in the year 1869, and Mr. Young died September 21st, 1872. We had but one child, Mary Louisa Young."

Mary Louisa manifested a great desire, when she was sixteen years old, to learn something of her father's relatives, but concluded they were all dead. Meanwhile, she learned from a visitor at San Bernardino, that there was a Dr. Ford living in Wabash, Indiana, who might be a relative. She wrote to me at a venture, and her mother says:

"My daughter, Louisa Young, was the most delighted child you ever saw, when your answer came, as she was always trying to find some relative on her father's side. We were both sur-

prised to hear from you, and to know for a certainty that you are her uncle, and, as you say, 'More than an uncle.' ''

This girl was married to Mr. William C. Garner, a banker, September 11th, 1887. They now live in San Bernardino, California.

Speaking of her surprise when she got a letter from me, she said:

''When I wrote, I did not expect any reply, for it has been two years since Mrs. Wilson told me about you. I thought in that time you might have moved away; but when I got the letter out of the office, I looked in the left-hand corner and saw 'Dr. James Ford,' and of course I knew it was from you. I was so pleased I could not stop to read it, but hurried home to impart the news to mamma, and have her read it. I thought all my relations on papa's side were dead.''

Since the above was written, Mrs. Garner has been blessed by an heir. She was born October 29th, 1888, and honors me with the name ''Ford Garner.''' May this child live and prosper, and honor the name she bears.

### SAMANTHA RACHEL YOUNG.

Samantha R. Young was born May 8th, 1842, and died August 29th, 1864. When she reached womanhood her health failed, and she died without issue.

### FRANCIS M. YOUNG.

Francis M. Young was born on his father's farm, March 8th, 1844, and died October 27th, 1873, and was buried at Mansfield. This is the last member of this numerous family. He visited us, in Wabash, in the year 1875. He was a man of fine appearance, a good talker, and sprightly, and had a good English Education.

## SUB-GROUP No. 4, OF GROUP I.

## WILLIAM JOHNSON FORD.

William Johnson Ford was born at Cadiz, Harrison county, Ohio, on the 30th day of April, 1805, and died at William Wallace Ford's residence near Wabash, Indiana, at eight o'clock p. m., on the 26th day of August, 1885. He lived with his parents at Cadiz until 1814; then the Ford family moved to Richland county, Ohio. But William, the day before they started, cut his foot with an axe and was unable to travel; so he was left with his uncle, Charles Young, until the Fall following, when Young also moved to the same county, bringing William with him.

The next year a subscription school was started in the old log school house, or cabin, two miles from our residence. The Irish Pedagogue boarded with us. Sister Mary and William attended this school in the Summer of 1815, for three months. Dillworth's Spelling Book was then in use, and much of the bad spelling of this day, among old people, arises from the incorrect orthography of that book. The facilities for getting an education, at that period, were very limited and expensive. William's father died on the 17th day of March, 1819; after this he attended a subscription school for three months each winter, for three or four years. During the summer season he assisted his brother, Nicholas, to carry on the farm.

During this interval, his only sister, Mary, had married David Young, an edge-tool maker, about the year 1821, who lived in Wellsburg, Brook county, Virginia. In the year 1822, probably, William went to Virginia to learn the smithing business with his brother-in-law. He served three years, and was a "Finished workman."

## BUSINESS MATTERS.

The method of working cast steel was unknown in the United States at this time. Nearly all edge tools in this country were manufactured in England. One day, a hard-looking tramp called at Young's shop and asked for work. He was an Englishman, from Sheffield. Young was making an

axe and using "Blister steel." The tramp told Young that if he would give him work he would teach him how to work cast steel on edge-tools. Young had no confidence in him, as he was drunk; but told him to come back sober and he would talk to him, and, perhaps, give him work, if he would keep "Straight." The next day he returned with an old cast steel razor, and said: "I will convince you that I can work cast steel." He forged out a small chisel and welded on it one half of the razor, and finished it in a neat and workman-like manner, and said:—

"Mr. Young, I will work for you one week for nothing, if you will weld the other half on a piece of iron, without borax."

Mr. Young tried, but failed. The Englishman got work, and proved to be a very efficient hand. Young, being a skilled workman, soon mastered all the intricacies in the manufacture of edge-tools from cast steel. The material was almost unknown, and very scarce in this country, but he got a supply through an Iron Merchant in Philadelphia, directly from the manufacturers, Nailor & Sanderson, Sheffield, England; also, a keg of borax (borate of soda) which was used as a flux in welding the steel to the iron.

I have been thus particular, in this description, to describe the manner of work, and how it came about, for it proved an epoch, not only in the tool business but also in the lives of David Young and William J. Ford.

A short time after this Young had a terrible attack of typhoid fever, which shattered his constitution to such a degree that he could not carry on the smithing business successfully. He now purchased a part of the Ford farm in Richland county, and moved to it about the year 1824. A smith shop was erected here, and Ford carried on the tool business nearly two years; but he was not pleased with his location. He sold out, and purchased a lot in Mansfield, erected a shop, mounted a grindstone six feet in diameter and ten inches thick on friction wheels. Then he went to Pittsburg and bought a ton of iron, a number of bars of cast steel, together with all the necessary tools he could not make himself. While these preliminary operations were in progress, he had burned and delivered one thousand bushels of charcoal. Railroads did not exist then, and all this material had to be hauled in wagons one hundred and sixty miles, while the roads were frozen.

In the Spring of the year 1827 he began operations in his new location. More work came in than he could do with his force, and he could find no smith that could make any part of the axe; consequently he had to do it himself. I was now in my sixteenth year, and, the home farm being sold, I had no employment. My brother gave me five dollars a month, with board and washing, to assist him in the shop.

After the shop was put in order with all necessary tools, he began work on one hundred axes. The body and eye were formed first, and made ready for the steel; then one hundred pieces of steel were prepared, and the welding-in process began. This done, "The axe was hammered off" and made ready for the grindstone. The whole body of the tool was ground as perfectly as they are to-day. Following this, came the tempering, which required tact and skill. The center of the bit was left harder than the corners, as the latter were more liable to break. The axe was now returned to the stone to be neatly finished. These seven distinct operations were necessary to finish this tool, but the tempering was the most particular operation in the whole business. This is one of the most difficult tools to make, as there are no straight lines about it; brain, muscles, and skill, are the forces necessary to complete it.

These tools gave entire satisfaction; every axe sold was an advertisement.

The adze, the chisel, the drawing-knife, the hoe, and almost all other cutting instruments in common use were also made. All this work was done by hand—and very hard work it was.

Ford was a stout man, but one year of this incessant toil gave him a pain in his breast, and reduced him in flesh and compelled him to stop work. He now sold his stock, tools and shop, and came home and rested six months. The next Spring (1828) he began business again, and continued it, off and on, as he could stand it, for three years. He was now about twenty-six years old.

On the 17th day of March, 1831, William J. Ford was married to Mary McGee, of Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, by the Rev. Johnson, a Union minister. The older members of this family belonged to his church. This wedding occurred in the evening. After supper, the room was cleared, the fiddle and the flute were soon put in unison, and the cotillion began. The Rev. Johnson and the beautiful bride stood at the head of the column; after a dance, the bowl of hot toddy was passed around; then another dance. Thus the devotees of Terpsichore kept up the amusement until eleven or twelve o'clock, and then dispersed. "A merry heart doeth good like a medicine, but a broken spirit drieth up the bones."—Prov. xvii, 22.

At that epoch the amusements of the people differed from those this day. If a minister should dance now at a wedding, his con-

gregation would dismiss him. Mr. Johnson was a highly educated Scotchman, whose moral character and orthodoxy were never called in question.

Ford had now signed his name to a note, as security for a considerable sum for a man owning a large estate, and who was considered entirely responsible; but the principal failed, and the security had to pay the debt.

He at this particular time, had received his distributive share of his father's estate, which enabled him to pay the debt. This adverse experience crippled him financially for years. The Wise man of Israel puts his experience bluntly, thus:

“He that is surety for a stranger shall suffer for it; but he that hateth suretyship is sure.”—Prov. xi, 15.

He continued at the anvil yet a couple of years, but in the mean time he purchased a small farm and made a beautiful home of it. The writer did nearly all of the carpenter work on his house; five or six hours each day were put upon it as exercise, while reading medicine. This was done gratuitously.

William continued in this property until September or October 1839, but he sold it and reached my house in Connorsville, Indiana, on his way to Alton, Illinois. My mother was with him, but she stayed with me. After resting a few days, he and his little family started on. I accompanied him out five or six miles. I was sorely impressed with the idea that he was going to a bad place. Lovejoy had been killed at Alton some months before; the Pro-Slavery element from the South had rushed in to take the Territory, and was determined to make it a slave State by brute force. I knew my brother hated slavery, and would speak his mind on all suitable subjects, regardless of consequences; but the parting hand was taken in silence; not a word was spoken. I felt that my beloved brother had passed away from me forever.

There were no railroads then; they moved in wagons. Alton was reached in safety, a house was rented, and they settled down for the winter. Robert McGee, his wife's only brother, drove his

team. The team was kept in use through the winter, which nearly paid expenses.

A few weeks after he left Connersville, I made a prospecting trip to Wabash County, Indiana; was well pleased with the country, and purchased one hundred and sixty acres of land within two miles of the county seat. During the Winter of 1839 and -40 I bought another one hundred and sixty acres adjoining the first, and was preparing to move to it. I had now learned from his letters that William was dissatisfied with his environment, and would leave it. Why? "*Bona terra, mala gens.*" A good land, but bad people.

I gave him a description of Wabash county and its inhabitants, and proposed to him that, if he would come to Wabash, I, too, would come and we would spend our days together. He did not answer this letter then, but it settled the question as to where he would go. When the answer came, however, it was from Wabash, Indiana. He purchased an eighty-acre lot of land two miles west of the county seat, built a log cabin and cleared five acres of land and put it in corn that Spring.

The country at this time was almost a dense forest. The people had plenty to eat, but they were poorly clad, the climate was damp and full of malaria. Their houses were poor and the incessant labor required to clear away the forest and raise their crops was a heavy tax on their vital forces. Cutting away the timber, and turning up the virgin soil to the action of light and heat, seemed to increase greatly the germs of disease. Thus they suffered, and from ague, rheumatism, and all that class of diseases arising from over-work, dampness and malaria. From 1840 to-45 William lost three children—one son and two daughters. He and his wife, also, had frequent attacks of fever and ague. Strong wills, brain and muscle, were the only agents at their command to give support in these trying conditions.

I had purchased a saw mill in the Spring of 1841, where the Wabash Railroad now crosses Kentner's Creek, four miles west

of Wabash. William Ford moved his family to it, took charge of it, repaired it, and ran it, up to March, 1844. While here, he succeeded in liquidating almost all his indebtedness, and getting an abundant material for his new house. His log dwelling house stood at the head of a deep ravine, where the fogs and malaria from the Wabash river covered it whenever the temperature of the air sank below the dew point.

It was evident that he could not live here and be well. Then in the spring of 1845 he built a neat frame house, sunk a well, blasted out in the lime rock thirty feet deep. This site was sixty rods further West, and on ground thirty feet higher and out of the line of moving fogs. The health of the family was much improved by this change.

It was in March, 1845, that he returned to his farm. He had girdled all the timber on the land he intended to clear, in the Summer of 1841. Now it was all dead, the roots rotten and easy to clear. He had given Bail Butler a lease on part of his land; this lease had expired. There were now about sixty acres of cleared land in fine condition for the plow.

The carpenter had his new house well in hand, and the prospect for an easier and happier life was near. A year or two after this a new barn was completed.

William was elected a Justice of the Peace, and received his Commission from the Governor June 18th, 1845. He served his term out with honor to himself and with benefit to the public at large. Being a good talker, he would persuade the plaintiff and defendant to settle their dispute, or compromise it without litigation, in one half the cases that came before him. This course rendered the office valueless to him; the public, however, appreciated his motives, and elected him for a second term. His Commission is dated June 18th, 1850, and he served under this Commission until March 7th, 1854, and then resigned. He served as Assessor, Overseer of the Poor, Supervisor, and some other small offices; but he was not an office-seeker.



In September, 1851, Ford's health failed; he had loss of appetite, was pale and nervous, and had palpitation of the heart. He sent for me to come and stay all night with him—it was Saturday, and I did so. William gave me a description of his case that evening. I took his case under advisement till morning; he said that he was unable to carry on his farm, it being too small to support his family by renting, which compelled him to seek some other means of support. In the morning he asked me—

“What do you think of my case?”

I answered, “I fear you would not believe me if I were to tell you.”

“Why, yes I would,” was his prompt reply.

I said, “It is my firm conviction that your whole trouble arises from the excessive use of tobacco.”

“James, do you really think so?”

“I most assuredly do,” was my reply.

William sat in silence a short time, and threw his chew of tobacco into the fire, sailed his “Plug” across the street into his neighbor's field, and said—

“If that is the cause of all this trouble, I'll soon dispose of it!”

I now gave him a prescription of iron, quinine, and the extract gentian, to enrich his blood and tone up his system, which it did. On the 25th day of December following, I was called again—not in the capacity of a physician, but as a guest, to partake of a sumptuous dinner. My brother was sound, and had increased in weight over twenty pounds. Thus the families “Rejoiced together.”

The Wabash and Erie Canal was the great water-way through which the products of the country, for many miles on either side of it, were transported Eastward: and all the merchandise in the West was shipped back upon it. Consequently, the warehouse business was large and profitable. Ford and his brother-in-law, Harris Gamble, in co-partnership, engaged in this business in the Spring of 1853. They continued the business two years, until

after the completion of the Lake Erie, Wabash and St. Louis Railroad, which divided the freighting and reduced the business on the canal. The partnership now ended.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

Now, after the lapse of sixteen years, William visited his friends and relatives at Mansfield, Ohio. His visit ended, he purchased a wagon and team there, and drove back to his farm near Wabash in the Fall of 1855, and continued there until the Fall of 1860. Then he came to Wabash to educate his children, and lived in a house he had purchased of Andrew J. Lewark's heirs. He lived here until the 25th day of June, 1861, at which time he bought a two-acre lot, No. 2, in Hanna and Ewing's Addition, of Henry O. Ray, price \$1,200, and took possession of it shortly after. Before this, however, he had sold the south half of his farm to John Nofsinger, March 18th, 1861; price, \$3,225. On March 11th, 1862, he purchased of David Coble a part of the Charley Section, adjoining the city limits north of the railroad; price, \$3,900. He moved into this property soon after the purchase, and continued here until after his wife, Mary Ford, died, April 7th, 1880. Jane McGee, his wife's sister, kept house for him for one year after Mrs. Ford's decease.

William W. Ford, William J. Ford's son, enlisted in the 8th Regiment, Indiana Infantry, about the 5th day of September, 1861, and went with it to Warsaw, Missouri, on the 5th of October. He was left in hospital, sick with enteric fever.

Surgeon Ford was taken sick of typhoid fever here also. He and his nephew succeeded in reaching Springfield, Missouri, a few days before the Army started back to Otterville, November 9th. W. J. Ford had heard of the illness of his son, and came to see him. Surgeon Ford, with W. J. Ford and son, reported to Headquarters. Gen. John Pope heard the Surgeon's statement of his case without any formal proceedings, and ordered his discharge papers made out. This was done immediately; the General's name was attached, and Ford and son started home the next morning.

The exposure during the journey, threw William J. Ford into a severe attack of typhoid pneumonia, which prostrated him for a

long time; he barely escaped with his life. February 7th, 1866, he sold the north half of his farm to James M. Blew; price, \$4,000.

James Mitchell Ford enlisted in the 130th Regiment, and was mustered into service on the 12th of March, 1864, and was commissioned First Lieutenant of Company H.; was honorably discharged June 8th, 1865.

Oscar Clemmons Ford enlisted in the 14th Battery, at Indianapolis, April 15th, 1864.

Thus William Ford was left on his farm without any assistance, but his patriotism was sufficient to cover all emergencies; he continued on the farm until about one year after his wife's death, 1881.

From this date Ford lived with his children, and sometimes with the writer. With whomsoever he stayed, he would, each Monday morning, lay down three silver dollars on his plate; he would have it no other way; He said he was "Able to pay for his board, and when he did it he felt free." The last winter of his life was spent with the writer. William was now in his 80th year, and it was evident that his vitality was yielding, slowly, but surely, to the inevitable. The accumulation of water in his extremities, and shortness of breath, pointed to the heart as the failing organ, and from it he died. His mind was clear, to the last. On the 26th day of August, 1885, his only brother, and all his children, stood by his bed. He did not fear death, but was anxious to make the "*change*." He had a sinking spell a short time before this, but had partly recovered. I said to him—

"William, your suffering is nearly done; the numbness of death is creeping over you; you will have no more pain."

He lay with his eyes closed a few moments; then, with a placid countenance he looked at us, and said, in a clear and sweet voice:

"*I bid you all farewell.*"

Then almost instantly he passed away.

He was true to his country, true to his family and neighbors, true to himself and true to his God.

On December 22nd, 1880, he sold his farm to James McKeever for \$7,000. Soon after this sale, he purchased, through his son, Dr. J. M. Ford, a business property in Kansas City, Missouri; price, \$8,000. He realized in rent from this property \$112 per month. This property was sold in July, 1885, a month before his death, for \$16,000. William J. Ford now made an equitable and equal division of all his money, notes, and effects, to his three sons; thus he succeeded in administering on his own estate, to the entire satisfaction of all concerned.

The following was published in the Wabash Plain Dealer, August 25th, 1885:

DEATH.

“William Johnson Ford—at the residence of his son, William W. Ford, six miles West of Wabash, on Wednesday night, aged eighty years. Mr. Ford was one of the pioneers of Wabash county, having been a constant resident here since 1840, and was, without doubt, one of the most widely known men in the county. During the past year his health failed rapidly—the general breaking down of a long life of useful activity. The funeral services will be conducted at the residence of his son this afternoon, after which the remains will be brought to Falls Cemetery for burial.”

MARY MCGEE.

Mary McGee was the third daughter of Robert McGee, of Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio. She was married to William J. Ford on the 17th day of March, 1831. The writer, not being acquainted with her antecedence, can not give her history. The statements made in her funeral notice are correct. No wayfarer ever came to her house and went away hungry. She was kind, accommodating, and a true friend.

DEATH OF MRS. MARY J. FORD.

“Mrs. Mary J. Ford, wife of William J. Ford, Esq., died in their home just West of the city, last evening, of lung fever, in the seventy-second year of her age, and was buried in the New

Cemetery. Mrs. Ford came to this county with her husband in the Spring of 1840, and here continued to reside until her death. She was quiet and retiring in her manners, loving and thoughtful as a wife, kind and affectionate as a mother, and greatly esteemed and loved as a neighbor. Her bereaved and aged companion has the sympathy of a large circle of friends, in his sorrow for the dead.'—*Wabash Plain Dealer*.

Children of Mary and William J. Ford, who died in infancy:

Edwin Henry, born February 5th, 1832, and died September 28th, 1841, aged 9 years, 7 months and 23 days.

Rebecca Jane, born October 8th, 1833, died September 23rd, 1835.

Robert McGee, born June 11th, 1835, and died of scarlet fever February 13th, 1845.

Hannah Maria, born March 16th, 1837, and died of scarlet fever February 26th, 1845.

These children were all buried in the Old Cemetery at Wabash Indiana, except Rebecca Jane. She was buried on Section 16, Mifflin township, Richland county, Ohio.

## WILLIAM WALLACE FORD.

Son of William J. Ford, son of James Ford, son of Henry Ford.

William Wallace Ford was born on his father's farm, three miles East of Mansfield, Ohio, February 28th, 1839. He was brought to Wabash in the Spring of the year 1840, where he was raised, and educated in the schools of the county. When he reached his majority, and the Rebellion broke out, he enlisted in the service of the United States, and was mustered, about the 5th of September, 1861, in the 8th Regiment, Indiana Volunteer Infantry, for three years. On the 23rd day of October he was taken sick at Warsaw, Missouri, of typhoid fever, followed by chronic diarrhoea. This attack shattered his constitution to such a degree that he was wholly unfit for duty then, and probably ever afterwards. He was honorably discharged in December, 1861. He

has not wholly recovered from this attack since; yet he is able to attend to his domestic affairs. He draws a pension.

On the 4th day of October, 1864, he was married to Miss Elizabeth Ann McClure, of this county (Wabash). For the last twenty-four years he has been engaged in farming, and has made it a success. He owns a beautiful farm on Falls Avenue Gravel Road, six miles West of Wabash, and is engaged in breeding fine stock; especially, of Short-horn Durham cattle.

He is a good citizen, and has the confidence and respect of all his acquaintances. The writer is not familiar with Mrs. Ford's antecedence; but she is retiring in manner, noble in disposition, and an elegant housekeeper.

This family has three grown sons, namely: William Johnson jr., James Edwin, and Walter Wallace.

### WILLIAM JOHNSON FORD, JR.

William J. Ford jr., was born on his father's farm on the 2nd day of July, 1865. He got an Academical education, and taught several terms of school; and is now engaged as a Loan and Financial Broker in Kansas City, Missouri. He is a bright young man and, if opportunity occur, will make his mark in the world.

### JAMES EDWIN FORD.

James Edwin Ford, son of W. W. Ford, was born on the old homestead, November 1st, 1866. He was educated in the public schools, and is a good English scholar. He lives with his parents and carries on the farm work, and is becoming a skilled agriculturist. He is one of those agreeable men "Whom to know is to love." There is a bright future before him, if he will accept of it.

**WALTER WALLACE FORD.**

Walter W. Ford, son of William W. Ford, was born in Wabash county, September 23rd, 1869. He was raised on his father's farm, and graduated in the public schools. He taught school in the winter of 1887-8. The County Commissioners secured to him a Scholarship in the State Agricultural College at LaFayette, Indiana, where he now is.

“Just as the twig is bent, the tree is inclined.” We shall see the direction this Institution will give this scion.



JAMES MITCHELL FORD, M. D. Ph. C.



James M. Ford was born May 31st, 1841, and brought up on his father's farm two miles west of the city. He attended school through the winter months, and did farm work through the summer season. At the age of fourteen years, the family moved to the town of Wabash, and he attended the graded schools of the town. In the Fall of 1858 he attended Wabash College at Crawfordsville, Indiana, and in the Spring of 1859 the Northwestern Christian (now Butler) University, at Indianapolis, Indiana.

In the Spring of 1861 he enlisted in the Three Months Service, but was attacked of measles and lay sick four weeks in hospital at Indianapolis, Indiana, and was not mustered into the United States Service, but returned home and attended school until the Fall of 1863: then was mustered into the 130th Regiment Indiana Volunteers, at Kokomo, Indiana. The Regiment being ordered into active service, went via Indianapolis, Indiana, and Louisville, Kentucky, to Nashville, Tennessee, where it was attached to the Second Division of the Twenty-third Army Corps, and moved to the front, joining the Army commanded by General Sherman, at Ringgold, Georgia. On May 4th the Regiment was engaged in the battle of Rocky-face Ridge, the opening battle of the celebrated Atlanta Campaign.

This Regiment was actively engaged in marching and fighting for one hundred days, thereafter taking part, in rapid succession, in the battles of Resaca, Kingston, Altoona, New Hope Church, Burnt Hickory, Kenesaw Mountain, Peachtree Creek, Chattahoochie, and the Siege of Atlanta.

At Kenesaw Mountain he was commissioned Second Lieutenant, and on the sixth of August following, in front of Atlanta, he was promoted to First Lieutenant. In October, 1864, while on the Hood raid in Alabama, he was taken sick and sent to hospital on Lookout Mountain. From there he was sent to the Grant officers' hospital, at Cincinnati, Ohio. While in hospital at this place he was detailed by the Secretary of War, and ordered to re-

port to Major-General Dodge, at St. Louis. Upon arrival at that city, he was appointed Department Ordnance Officer for the Department of Western Missouri, with Headquarters at Jefferson City. He was here given charge of and made responsible for arms and ammunition and munitions of war, amounting to \$4,000,000. In April, 1865, the war being closed, he was mustered out of service by Colonel John Hamilton, Chief Mustering and Disbursing Officer of the Department of Missouri. Closing this business, he returned to Wabash, Indiana.

J. M. Ford now engaged in the study of medicine in the office of Dr. J. Ford, and continued with close application for two years; then entered the University of Michigan in the class of '68 and '9. In the Spring of 1869 he graduated as Doctor of Medicine, but remained in the University as a post-graduate, until July 1st of the same year, taking the degree of Pharmaceutical Chemist. After returning to Wabash, he entered into partnership with Dr. A. J. Smith in the practice of medicine; but, feeling restless under this slow way of earning money by the practice of medicine, determined to seek the new and undeveloped West as a field for future operations.

Before he entered on his Western enterprise, he wisely concluded not to go alone; thus, in October, 1869, he was married to Beulah Kirk, daughter of Judge Nathan Kirk, of Kokomo, Indiana. Leaving Wabash in the year 1871, he engaged in the drug and grocery business in Gibson City, Illinois, and stayed there one year. Then, going to the State of Kansas, settled in Anderson county, and engaged in merchandising up to 1876; then, closing his business there, he moved to Kansas City, Missouri, and engaged in the drug business, and followed the profession of druggist for five years. At this period (1881) began the great and phenomenal growth of Kansas City. Ford now sold out the drug store, and engaged in Real Estate business. At this time he became so identified with the interests and improvements of the city that an active part was taken in its municipal affairs. Being

elected to the Board of Aldermen, and for two years holding the Presidency of the Board, he fostered the introduction and building of the first cable road in the city, which has proven of so great success that now fifty-two miles of cable road are in operation, costing in the aggregate, five million dollars.

All his real estate ventures proved successful, and money was made rapidly. In one instance he cleared \$103,000 on a single purchase, in two years, on an investment of \$21,000. In 1886 he cleared up the real estate business, and turned his attention to the Coal and Iron Fields of the South.

J. M. Ford has been instrumental in organizing many large Companies, and placing over \$4,000,000 in actual cash, in the South, in the last ten years. An idea of the enterprises he has engaged in, may be obtained from the list of Corporations he has organized. The list of published reports that could be obtained, is as follows, namely: He was the—

## PRESIDENT

First National Bank, Denison, Texas

Paid up Capital ..... \$ 150,000

## DIRECTOR

First National Bank, Harrisonville, Missouri

Paid up Capital ..... 50,000

## VICE PRESIDENT

Bank of Fort Payne, Fort Payne, Alabama

Paid up Capital ..... 50,000

## DIRECTOR

Fort Payne Coal and Iron Co., Fort Payne, Ala.

Paid up Capital ..... 5,000,000

## PRESIDENT

Fort Payne Furnace Co., Fort Payne, Ala.

Paid up Capital ..... 200,000

*HISTORY OF THE FORD FAMILY***DIRECTOR**

Fort Payne Rolling Mill Co., Fort Payne, Ala.

Paid up Capital..... 500,000

**DIRECTOR**

Fort Payne Investment Co., Fort Payne, Ala.

Paid up Capital..... 300,000

**DIRECTOR**

Denison Land and Investment Co., Denison, Tex.

Paid up Capital..... 1,200,000

**PRESIDENT**

Denison Cotton Manufacturing Co., Denison, Tex.

Paid up Capital..... 500,000

**DIRECTOR**

Southwestern Coal and Improvement Co., N. Y.

Paid up Capital..... 5,000,000

**DIRECTOR**

Western Land and Improvement Co., St. Louis

Paid up Capital..... 1,500,000

**DIRECTOR**

Kansas City Mining Exchange.

The writer does not know how many other enterprises he may be interested in, but it is known that he owns, in real estate, bank stock, and money loaned on real estate mortgages, amounting to \$350,000. And Beulah Ford, wife of J. M. Ford, owns in her individual right, property and money of the value of \$120,000.

T. P. Grasty, in *Arkansaw Traveler*, says of him—

“He was one of the men who purchased and donated the ground on Wyandotte street where the million dollar Board of Trade edifice is being built. In fact, he has been for some years one of the largest property owners in Kansas City: one who has ever been foremost in every public-spirited movement. He has

not only got rich himself, but has made all his friends comfortably rich since he came here. So great was public confidence in his judgment, that he had no difficulty in organizing a capital of five millions, to develop the coal and iron deposits on the tract and build a manufacturing city at Fort Payne, Alabama, where the Company owns fifty-six square miles, close to Fort Payne, together with most of the contiguous land in the beautiful Wills Valley."

In conclusion, I will say that Dr. Ford is one of the most genial gentlemen of my acquaintance; a man of quick perceptions, untiring energy, and liberal views. His judgment is wonderfully unerring, his courage unflinching, his instincts those of a courteous, considerate gentleman.

### BEULAH KIRK FORD.

Mrs. Beulah Kirk Ford was born January 21st, 1846. Was married to J. M. Ford in October, 1869, and is the mother of one son, Ernest Ford.

### ERNEST FORD.

Ernest was born in Wabash, on the 14th day of August, 1870, and resides with his parents in Kansas City, Missouri. He is a member of the Young Men's Christian Association; a bright youth, full of energy, and bids fair to make a useful man.

The writer knows little of Dr. Ford's personal affairs, but enough is given to show that he is a man of bright intellect, great business capacity, and has the merited confidence of business men wherever he is known.

**OSCAR CLEMMONS FORD.**

Son of William J. Ford, son of James Ford, son of Henry Ford.

Oscar C. Ford was born on the old homestead, on the 19th day of October, 1845. He was raised as a farmer, and educated in the schools of the county, up to the seventeenth year of his age: then he enlisted and was mustered into the service of the United States March 24th, 1862, and was assigned to the 14th Battery. He states that he was in the following battles:

At Guntown, Mississippi; at Nashville, Tennessee; at Spanish Fort, near Mobile; and at Fort Blakely, Alabama. He escaped all the perils of the battle-field, and was honorably discharged, at Indianapolis, September 1st, 1865.

Oscar Ford married Ellen Amanda Brown, of Wabash, Indiana, October 4th, 1867, by whom he has had, up to date, the following children:

CORIDON, born March 14th, 1871.

MARY BLANCHE, born November 21st, 1874.

ROBERT MCGEE, born October 20th, 1883.

RALPH ROGER, born August 2nd, 1885.

FRED FRELINGHUYSEN born April 27th, 1887.

Oscar C. Ford was known as a "Very clever man;" a "True patriot;" and a "Useful citizen."

He moved to Kansas City, Missouri, in the year 1887, where he still lives.

## SUB-GROUP No. 5, OF GROUP I.

## JAMES FORD.

Son of James Ford, son of Henry Ford.\*

James Ford was born at Cadiz, Harrison county, Ohio, on the morning of the 19th day of January, 1812. His father had been elected a Representative in the Ohio Legislature in the Fall of 1811, from Jefferson county, and was not at home when this son was born. The news reached him some days later. Next morning the Upper and Lower House met, and put the Speaker of the Senate in the Chair. Then they hoisted Ford by the legs and bore him aloft to the Speaker's desk, amid shouts of—

*"Hurrah for Ford's Baby!"*

The spirit of jollification—and perhaps other spirits—had something to do with this "Fun" (the writer does not now remember).

In the Spring of the year 1815 father sold his farm and moved to Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio. Here he bought three hundred and twenty acres of land, and built another mill, on the Rocky Fork of the Mohican. Here the writer was raised: here he received his education, and here he was taught to do all kinds of manual labor peculiar to the farm, the mill, and the clearing of land.

In the Summer of 1818, the writer, six years old, was playing about the mill-yard. My father was running the mill. William, my brother, and sister Mary, were at school. Being lonely, I crawled in between two saw-logs and fell asleep. My mother came to father and enquired for the "Child." Father said—

*"He was playing around here, a bit ago."*

Instantly search was made—the "Child" was not found. The conclusion was, that I had fallen into the forebay and was drowned. Father, being a good waterman, dived to the bottom

---

\* The pronoun "I" is used in this history, instead of "He."

of the forebay and crawled over the floor, but found nothing; he now ran to the head-gates and closed them, locked the water-wheel and hoisted the gate to let off the water. They sat down, all broken up, weeping for the child; but the sweet word "Papa" was heard in the rear—The pen of the writer stops here, powerless to describe the scene. No artist could portray the sorrow, the surprise, the joy, mingled in those countenances. The impression of this scene, on my mind, is almost as strong to-day as it was seventy years ago. Children never know what it costs their parents to raise them, until they pass through such scenes themselves.

My father died March 17th, 1819, and I was then too young to appreciate his loss.

This year my sister Mary taught a Summer school in a log cabin, which had greased paper instead of window glass. With her I took my A, B, C, lessons. In those days the boy who could read, write a fair copy hand, and cypher to the Rule of Three, single proportion, was regarded as a good scholar. Grammar, Geography, and many other branches taught at this day, were never thought of. Boys able to work on the farm, stayed at home through the cropping season, and attended school three or four months during the Winter. The reading book was the Bible.

A gentleman came from Pennsylvania and taught a school in our neighborhood, who induced me to study some of the higher branches. He taught me Murray's Grammar, Woodbridge's Geography, Geometry, Trigonometry and Surveying. In the two latter I worked out every sum, and transferred the work into a book, made all the drawings and colored some of them. Edwin H. Ford has these books now. Lindley Murray's English Reader was used in this school. This teacher advised me to get Blair's Natural Philosophy, and "Make yourself master of it." This I did: the study of Physics suited my natural bent of mind, and I took great delight in it.

In the sale of the homestead-farm Rebecca Ford kept the north eighty acres, and I built her a house. It was a one-story frame



building, had two rooms and a porch on the front side, and a stone chimney at the north end. I cut the timber, had it sawed into lumber of suitable size, made the shingles, framed the house and enclosed it. Then the floor was laid, and the whole interior was ceiled with worked stuff. I made the sash, and two panel doors; my mother found the glass and nails; all else was done by me without cost to her. While this work was progressing, she sold this land to her son Nicholas, reserving her house, garden, and the use of the yard and spring as long as she lived. This sale seemed necessary, as I intended to leave, to qualify myself for any kind of business that I could reach; and would probably not live much longer with her. I am not ashamed to write it: I loved my mother. She was worthy of it. She was my Guardian Angel; I owe my all to her. After I was settled and had a home of my own she came and lived with me for about thirty-five years; but I never was able to pay the debt of gratitude I owed to her; but instead, I have extended that gratitude, in a substantial way, to other mothers who were in distress and had no one to look to for help. This I did, and do yet, for her sake, and am happy in the act.

The studies mentioned above were carried to completion in that house. I had no company except mother, but my whole soul, body and spirit, were wrapped up in these expanding lines of study.

In my childish fancy, I thought I would soon know all that there was to be known. The history of Washington, by Weems, had been read; Washington was my beau ideal of perfection; was a surveyor, and could measure unknown distances by triangulation. I had attained to this; but about this time I had got Blair's Natural Philosophy. It soon dispelled all my childish ideas about nature and her laws—to me vast and incomprehensible. I was not discouraged, but was determined to know something more about this "Speck of a world" I had been living in these seventeen years, without knowing, really, any thing about it. I had

reached a pivotal point in my life; I took more real pleasure in the acquisition of knowledge than I did in play. My playmates said:

“Ford has got religion—has quit swearing, and is as sober as Priest Roland” (the Presbyterian Minister). My answer was:

“Ford has not got religion; but has quit swearing, because it spoils the beauty of our language. Besides, well-bred people don’t swear; and I am thinking about the great things I am studying.”

In the year 1828 I started to Kenyon College, on foot. I had sent my trunk by stage to Mt. Vernon, five miles West of Gambier. Gambier was reached Tuesday noon. I knew no one. Bishop Chase was enquired for, he being the President of the College. I will give the conversation, just as it occurred, between the Bishop and myself:

“Be seated”—pushing a chair toward me. “Have you any business with me?”

“Yes, sir.”

“What is it?”

“I came to go to school.”

“Have you any letters?”

“No, sir.”

“Where did you come from?”

“Mansfield, Ohio.”

“Did your father send you?”

“No, sir; he is not living.”

“Your guardian sent you?”

“No, sir; I came myself.”

“How did you know anything about this Institution?”

“I saw it advertised in a newspaper.”

“It will cost you sixty dollars a year for boarding, washing, and tuition.”

“Yes, sir; I’ve got the money.”

“Have you ever been to school?”

“Yes, sir.”

"What books have you read?"

"My reading books were the Bible and the English Reader; Dayball and Smith's Arithmetics, Woodbridge's Geography, and Murray's Grammar."

"Anything else?"

"Yes, sir; Geometry, and Surveying."

"Ah! You are a Surveyor, then; can you box the compass?"

"Yes, sir."

"Try it."

I began at the North, and boxed, sailor-fashion, around to the West.

"That's right—that will do."

During this conversation a lady plainly dressed, wearing glasses, came into the room. She was portly and dignified. Up to this time I had felt easy, but a sense of bashfulness had come over me. The Bishop informed the lady of my case, and said—

"What shall we do with him?"

The lady said to me—

"Have you a mother?"

"Yes, ma'm."

"Is she a good mother to you?"

I stammered out—"The best I ever had!"

"I expect so"—laughing heartily. The Bishop was laughing, too. My cheeks burned like fire. She said—

"Bishop, we will take this boy."

My sixty dollars were paid, and my name, age, and residence, were placed on the books.

Bishop Chase's nephew, Salmon P. Chase, "Was a tutor in the College,\* and under the latter I began the study of Latin, and read 'Historia Sacra,' and attended Kenyon one year; then, a Classical High School having been established at Mansfield, I attended school there a year, taking a Classical course." Meanwhile, Dr.

---

\* See page 15 of the 11th District of Biographical History of Self-made Men of the State of Indiana. Also, History of Wabash County, page 165.

Bushnell, our family physician, persuaded me to read medicine with him. My mother was opposed to this, on the ground that "It was a hard life and not much money in it." But the study involved so many of the Natural Sciences that it pleased me, and I made up my mind to engage in it as a life-work.

#### THE STUDY OF MEDICINE.

Two years of hard study was put in; of that time, five months was spent with Wistar's Anatomy. It was a dry study, and, mentally, hard work; but it was regarded as the foundation upon which the whole superstructure of the Science of medicine stood. Hence, the necessity of thorough work in the beginning. In addition to Anatomy, Chemistry, Physiology, *Materia Medica* and Therapeutics, Theory and Practice, Surgery, and Obstetrics, were studied.

In the Spring of 1833 I had made arrangements to pass the Summer and Fall with Dr. Craighead, of Dayton, Ohio. Dr. Bushnell gave me a certificate of the length of time I had studied with him, stating that I "Had been a diligent student, was a man of good moral character," etc.; but on the day I was to start I failed to get the money that was owing me, consequently was compelled to stay in Mansfield. Dr. A. Miller made me a generous offer to come into his office, which was accepted. Drs. Miller and Bushnell had been in co-partnership years before, and were bitter enemies; of this, however, I had no knowledge, but it made Bushnell very hostile to me. If I had known of this animosity, I would not have accepted Miller's proposition; but, as I intended to stay only a short time, I continued with him until the first of October; then I had determined to take a course at Dartmouth College, and all preparations had been made. I went to Cleveland by stage, then went aboard a ship. That night the ship was wrecked on Lake Erie, and I lost everything I had, except the suit of clothes I wore. Before I could re-fit, it was too late for me to attend lectures at Dartmouth, and so abandoned the project. I then determined to go South, thinking there would be a better

opening for me in the practice of medicine, than in the North. When I arrived at Cincinnati, ice had closed navigation, so I could not go farther. While in doubt as to what I would do next, I met a friend living in Philomath, Union county, Indiana, who desired me to go home with him and he would give me employment for the Winter.

## INDIANA.

On the morning of the 10th of November, 1833, I reached Philomath, Union county, Indiana, by stage. Here I met my old friend, Samuel Tizzard, and his son William B. Here I rested three or four days, having rode three days and nights in the stage coach over corduroy bridges and through mud until the life was nearly shaken out of me. On the morning of the 14th of November horns were sounding in a dozen places, dogs barking, people shouting and crying—

*“The Day of Judgment is come! The stars are falling, and we shall all be burned up!”*

The cattle had caught the alarm, and were bellowing; and the horses were neighing and making a great noise with their feet. I sprang out of bed and ran to the front door. The sight was appalling: the stars were shooting like arrows in all directions, but did not quite reach the earth. The landlord, with his white locks, by my side, was pale and trembling. Every star in the “Great Dipper” (Ursa Major) was standing still. Venus shone brightly, Jupiter was barely visible, and all the old stars known to me were in their places. These facts satisfied me that the supposed Day of Judgment had not come yet, and that this exhibit was some phenomenon in nature not understood.

Mr. Tizzard was very anxious to have a school taught that coming winter; this proposition was accepted. I went to the school examiner, was examined, and licensed to teach school. Alpheus Young, my cousin, followed me to this place and went to school to me that Winter. I took him through his Arithmetic, English Grammar, and Geography. I mention this, for I had more pupils

than I could teach alone, and he rendered me much assistance. I had sixty pupils, many of whom were young men and women—some of them twenty-five years old. Many of those pupils had never been inside a school house before. This is the first and the last school I ever taught. In the year 1861, when the 8th Regiment was organized at Indianapolis, Indiana, I had the pleasure of meeting some of these pupils I had taught twenty-eight years before. They were again under my care. My term ended the last of March, 1834.

Mr. Tizzard was then publishing the *Star in the West*, and desired me to travel through the North part of the State of Indiana, in the interest of his paper. Thinking this a good opportunity to see the country, the offer was accepted, and a zig-zag tour through the State was made. Some beautiful places in which to practice medicine were found, but they lacked the people. I now returned and went to Connersville, Indiana. Financially, my school had been a failure: after paying board there was little left.

I had not earned anything for the last two years, and my finances were getting low; so I concluded to work until Fall, then attend a course of Medical Lectures in Cincinnati, and then go into practice the following Spring. Jefferson Sample, the leading carpenter, was called on for work. After viewing me from head to foot, he said—

“You don’t look like a man that had ever done any work in your life!”

I had not worked any for about four years, was pretty well dressed, and doubtless appeared so; but I said to him—

“Give me work, and if I do not fill the bill you may discharge me at once.”

“I want a hand badly,” he said, “And if you can work I’ll give you one dollar a day and board you, and you may come in the morning.”

This proposition was accepted, and I stayed with him until Fall. I had a trunk full of medical and scientific books with me,

and put in all my leisure time in study; did not mix or get acquainted with the people, but was known as the "Strange Young Man." Mrs. Sample was found to be a lady of some culture, very kind and obliging. She gave me a nice room, where I continued some length of time after my work ended.

Dr. Philip Mason called on me, examined my books, many of which he had never seen before. He inquired all about my studies, my prospects, and where I was going. He gave me a very warm invitation to come and stay with him two weeks, ride with him and see his patients. Mr. Sample advised me to do this, as "Mason was an honest man, and would treat me kindly." He called on me next morning with an extra horse, and I rode that day with him. He advised me to make out the character (pathology) of the disease and the proper treatment for it, which was done; of course it was not known what his opinions were, but it was noticed that I had differed with him both in the pathology and treatment. That evening he wanted to know my reasons for the statements made touching those cases; they were freely given. This occurred from day to day, as long as I remained with him.

During these weeks Dr. Mason gave me his plans for the next year. He stated that he and his partner, R. E. Brown, would dissolve partnership in 1835, and that he intended to run for Representative in the next Legislature, and wanted some man that could keep his practice, and transact the business in his drug store while he was "Stumping" the county; and, if elected, to take charge of his business permanently; that he intended to quit practice at the end of the year 1836, and devote his whole time to his store. "Now," said he, "If you will stay with me, I will give you all the business you can do, and leave you with the practice."

I thanked him for his confidence and kindness, but could not give him an answer then.

The Winter wore away, and I stuck to my books.

In March, 1835, the Medical Society of the Fifth District of the State of Indiana, met at Connersville. There was a law in force

which required all persons to be examined by a legally appointed Board of Censors, and, if found qualified, the applicant was licensed to practice medicine and surgery anywhere in the State. I went before this Board, was examined and licensed.

Dr. Philip Mason and I had no contract as to what pay he would give me for my labor, as it depended on my ability and success in getting practice among the people; but he was to furnish everything, and board me, which he did.

The year 1835 proved to be a sickly season, and we had more calls than Mason, Brown and Ford could answer. In two weeks I had all the patients I could visit each day. Of course, I got the refuse; all patients regarded as incurable, the poor, and all others they could not attend, fell into my hands. Many of those regarded as hopeless, recovered.

I desire to make a short digression here, for the benefit of those who come after me.

In September, 1835, a very dangerous fever prevailed in Connersville. The first week after the attack, nine of the citizens died in the village. The people were appalled. They died on the fifth day after the attack—none ran over the sixth. Dr. Mason was compelled to leave his store and assist in treating the sick. The usual treatment prescribed in fevers, had no effect. The major part of the blood, in returning to the heart, passes through the liver; here it was obstructed, and congestion was the result. Now, unless this dam in the liver is removed, so that every part of the body receives its due proportion of blood, the patient can not live. The medicine failed to remove this dam, hence the result was inevitable.

A new line of treatment was resolved upon, which I will describe, and give the reason for every step taken:

My first patient was a young lady twenty years old, of good constitution. Her mother and brother had died a few days before, and an older sister was dying, of this disease. Dr. Miller was the physician. Thus, my patient was terribly depressed, mentally as



well as physically. Her father gave her the privilege of selecting her own physician, and I was called.

I bled her in the arm, sitting erect; nearly a quart of blood had flown, when she perspired freely, turned sick at the stomach and was faint; then the bleeding was stopped. This operation reduced the volume of blood in the system, relaxed it, and gave the heart greater power to propel the remainder through the blood-vessels. She now took a vomit of tartar-emetic and ipecacuanha, which operated freely, throwing out a quantity of black bile; some chicken broth was now given her, which quieted the stomach; but, meanwhile, her bowels were moved freely. All this was accomplished in an hour. This was followed by an anodyne. In another hour she lay free from pain, free from fever, and sweating profusely. The congestion was completely removed, reducing the liver in size; the fever gone, an equilibrium of circulation established; in short, the disease was broken up. A few mild alteratives and tonics completed the cure. I stayed with this patient, as I did with all others, while going through this ordeal. I confess I was elated by the signal success of this treatment, but kept still, for fear the next patient might not do so well as this one did; but it never failed in any case I ever treated afterwards. In a few hours the success of this case was known all over the neighborhood, and I do not think a new case was lost afterward.

This treatment had been suggested to Drs. Mason and Brown, together with the pathological reasons for it, but they opposed it, stating that—

“The patient would die, after such copious venesection!”

They had little experience with the lancet, and scarcely ever used it. I had read Dr. James Johnson and Marshall Hall on blood-letting, and had bled quite a number during my study, and had no fear. They had lost every patient they had treated, and, if mine died, I still would stand on a level with them.

If I failed to make out a satisfactory pathology; if any condition or symptom obtained, that was not understood; or, if the patient

was in a critical or a dangerous condition, it was made an invariable rule never to sleep until all medical authority accessible had been examined. And, if it was found, after this study of the case, that my treatment was not the best, or failed to meet the indications according to all accredited standards, I immediately returned and made the change. This was done for the benefit of the patient, and especially to clear my own conscience. "Ars longa, vita brevis est."

This habit soon put me in possession of all knowledge touching this class of cases. In reading, written notes were taken of every thing I did not understand, or had not seen before. These notes were carried with me, and were read again and again, until they were thoroughly imprinted on the memory. If physicians would pursue this course, they would be surprised at the amount of useful knowledge they would acquire in one year.

While in this digression, I desire to make another statement:

A man may be never so well qualified to do or perform a certain work; yet, if the opportunity never arises, he may never be able to make an exhibit of his latent powers. General Grant would have died in obscurity, had not the "Convenient time" arrived to develop his powers. It is *Opportunity* then, *cæteris paribus*, that *develops a man*.

I was on trial, and my opportunity had come. Though twenty-four years of age, I appeared so young and fresh, I was regarded a "Beardless boy." In many cases I was called because they could get no one else; yet, if I made two or three visits, the case was held against all opposition. Success was the watch-word. During the Fall of this year many cases of typhoid fever occurred, which ran from four to six weeks. So far as can now be recollected, all recovered.

The time of meeting of the Legislature had arrived. Dr. P. Mason left for Indianapolis early in December,\* 1835, and "I left the store to be managed by Dr. James Ford, a young man who had

\* See Autobiography, page 142, by Dr. Mason.

studied medicine" in Ohio. At this time, a young man, Imily Jackson, was reading medicine with me. He was put in the drug and bookstore, as salesman; this gave me time to care for my patients; but, unfortunately, he too was stricken with typhoid fever, and this greatly increased my responsibility and labor. Another man was, however, employed in Jackson's place; but even then my labor averaged about sixteen hours each day.

During my first year's practice I had a number of cases of fracture—two of the thigh, and one in the neck of the femur of a female seventy years old, and a good union was obtained in all those cases. In the year 1836 the "Mammoth Canal Bill" became a law. The people of Connersville were celebrating the event, when their cannon was prematurely discharged, and tore away both arms of one man, fractured the skull of another, removed an arm for a third, knocked out an eye for a fourth, and a number of persons were burned about the face and eyes. Dr. Brown refused to operate on these cases, and Dr. Miller also. The wounded were suffering terribly for the want of a surgeon to amputate and dress their bleeding wounds. Then I was asked if I could perform those operations, and they were told I could. Both of Sexton's arms were amputated, and dressed: the loose fragments of skull were removed, and dressings applied to the head; but it was evident that this man could not live, and he died of compression of the brain fifteen hours after the accident. The second man's arm was amputated above the elbow; he had a good recovery.

The wounds of all the others were dressed, and they also recovered. This was before the days of chloroform.

My various duties continued until late in February, when Dr. Mason returned. Mason's and Brown's co-partnership ended March 1st, 1836. My administration of Mason's affairs was "Satisfactory," and I was free—could stay or go. I chose the former. One year of hard and responsible labor had been put in, which had cleared seventy-five dollars per month in favor of Mason; this did not include claims against irresponsible parties.

I had got my boots half-soled, and a new pair of pantaloons—price, five dollars. Mason paid for these, and said—

“*I think the experience you have got in the practice of medicine is worth your year’s labor. We’ll consider this square!*”

I give this statement without comment, as Dr. Mason is dead.

#### A FREE MAN.

I had now, with the exception of three months labor with Mr. Sample, gone nearly two years without earning a dollar. My clothes were worn out, and I was somewhat in debt. I was no pessimist, but had a fixed purpose, if blest with health and life, to accomplish. I had made a reputation as a physician and surgeon. Dr. Mason had quit practice, which made an opening for another to fill. The influential citizens, many of whom had never employed me, persuaded me to stay; they thought I had a “*Bright future before me, If I would accept of it.*” All the attorneys, all the physicians, and all the merchants except Daniel Hankins, assured me of their sympathy and support; even Dr. Miller, who had been a hot opponent, said—

“If you go away, some old physician will come in and take more of my practice than you did; stay, and by the Gods! I’ll stand by you!”

What more could I ask of any people? *I stayed.*

Dr. Mason invited me to his store, and said, “I want to fit you out with office furniture and medicine, and you may pay me when you get ready; and there is Bob, in the stable; you may use him, until you can get a horse.” An office was rented, and my outfit fixed up for business. In a few days a sheet of tin was nailed up by my door, beautifully painted, with border and letters of gold, which read—

\* \* \* \* \*

DR. J. FORD’S  
OFFICE.

\* \* \* \* \*

I had not ordered a sign, but I knew by the fine workmanship that it came from my friend, Amon Johnson. On the first of

May, 1836. Mr. George Fearis came to me early in the morning, leading a fine young mare, with a costly saddle, bridle, and martingal, and said—

“Here, Doc., I have brought you a horse; you haven’t any.”

“You are joking; I have no money to buy a horse with, now,” I replied.

“It don’t make any difference; you take the horse and rig for sixty-five dollars, and pay me when you can.”

“I do not like to take the risk—I do not know what is before me.”

“I do not ask you to take any risk; I am taking the risk. If you never pay me, I shall not complain.”

He did not ask for a note, and would not take any interest. The same horse and rig would be worth now one hundred and twenty-five dollars

The kindness and consideration those people gave me, placed me under a life-long obligation. When the mind yet reverts to those scenes, a sense of gratitude steals over me, pleasant to contemplate. I could return this kindness and consideration only through my professional services. I did this to my utmost ability.

The year 1836 was a sickly year. The Fall before we had typhoid fever, which ran far into the Winter, and pneumonia followed. Those who had intermitting, or remitting fever in the Fall, had a return of it in the Spring.

On the twentieth day of October, 1836, I quit practice, and went soon after to Cincinnati,\*to attend a course of lectures in the Ohio Medical College. Two years’ practice was considered equivalent to one course of lectures; consequently I was considered eligible for graduation, if I could pass the green room. But I did not graduate then, for I expected to attend another term shortly, and was not examined. I took a private course in surgery, where I performed nearly every operation on the dead subject known to the profession at that time. This has been of great use to me ever since. Copious notes were kept of the six lectures

delivered daily during the whole term. The lectures ended, and I reached Connersville February 15th and continued practice until April 13th; then took stage for Mansfield, Ohio, where I visited friends, collected some money due me from my father's estate, and returned again by the last of the month.

An episode occurred about this time which I will mention, for it had much to do with me in life and action ever since:

On the fifth day of June, 1837, I was married to Miss America Holton, daughter of Rev. Jesse Holton, at the bride's home, on Monday evening at six o'clock, by her father, who lived a short distance from Connersville.

I had a number of patients on hand at the time, but Dr. P. Mason kindly came to my relief, and visited them on Tuesday and Wednesday. On Friday, the tenth of June, we took charge of our house, and spent a happy Summer and Autumn. We would sing, wife and I—

“Swift as the winged arrow flies,  
Speedily the mark to find,  
Swiftly, thus, our fleeting years  
Pass, and leave no trace behind.”

But before sixteen years passed, we did leave six “Living traces behind.”

My time was exclusively devoted to my profession, and study. On the first day of February, 1838, I purchased a house and lot, situated in the Town of Connersville, Indiana, of Russell S. Potter and wife. Lot No. 35, on Main street; consideration, \$600. This house was a one-story wooden structure, of two rooms. I raised it up, put a cellar under it, and made it a very comfortable dwelling. I also built an office, and stopped rent.

This year passed without any incident worthy of note. On the fourteenth day of June, 1838, I operated on an old man for strangulated inguinal hernia: he had been given up to die. The sac reached to the middle of the thigh. The incision had to be made large, as the protruding bowel had agglutinated. This was before the days of chloroform, but the man recovered without accident.

The next day after this operation, a young man had been injured in the lower part of the abdomen, causing inflammation in the neck of the bladder (cyst); he could not void his urine, neither could a catheter be introduced; death seemed inevitable. I was called, as the dernier resort. I introduced a trocar and canula (a silver tube) into the cyst, just above the pubis, withdrew the trocar, leaving the tube in; through this the urine rushed out with great force, relieving the great tension and pain at once. This tube was kept in the cyst for three days, after which the water flowed through the natural channel; then it was withdrawn. He was sound in a week. These operations had never been performed in that country before, and the public regarded them as something wonderful.

These cases are given, to show what a man may accomplish, if he be qualified for the work before him; it also illustrates what is said on page 80 of this book—that it is "*Opportunity*" that develops the man.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

Late in the Fall of this year Robert D. Helm and I visited the county of Wabash, Indiana, and rode over a large portion of it. I was pleased with it and purchased the "Certificate" for one hundred and sixty acres of Canal land in Section five, Town twenty-seven, North, and Range seven, East, within two miles of Wabash; price, \$400. This location had the climate, the water, the soil, the timber, the stone, and the canal, then nearly completed, together with the geographical position between the East and West, which made it prospectively at least, a very desirable location. In January, 1839, I purchased another quarter-section, North of and adjoining the land described above, for \$450.

A new wagon had been built, horses and harness purchased, and all preparations made to move at once to Wabash. My old friends, once again, rallied around me and persuaded me to stay. Dr. Chapman of Waterloo offered me \$1,000 for my house and lot. I had quit practice, and was settling up my business. At that time I had, probably, \$2,000, possibly \$3,000 in unsettled claims against my customers. I called on the poorest first, and they drew the money from their merchants on their outstanding corn, and paid me at once. I now sold my wagon, horses and harness to Hiram

Woodcock for \$300, and took his note payable in one year. In that year (1839) I charged responsible persons, in my practice, \$1.019; equal to \$3,000 now.

In July, 1832, President Jackson vetoed the United States Bank. At this time (1837) there were six hundred and thirty-four State banks, with a capital of \$292,000,000; \$149,000,000 in circulating notes, \$227,000,000 in deposits, and \$525,000,000 in bonds and discounts. The historian says—

“The refusal to continue the National Bank, gave free scope to State institutions, and they grew with mushroom rapidity.” In some instances, “A dozen of them would club together to make a show for one only, when the Examiner came along, and the same specie would be an hour in advance of him, all along his route.” “The trouble began in 1837, and by the first of June there was an entire suspension of specie payments; values fell from dollars to shillings, and all business was deranged. Millions of people were reduced from comparative ease to sharp poverty, and a period of wretchedness began, which continued nearly five years. However, Congress passed a general bankrupt law,” which gave some relief.

When the President vetoed the “Bill” to re-charter the United States Bank, he destroyed the “Balance-wheel” that regulated all values, as well as the commerce of the country. The reason he gave for this act, was, that the bank had “English capital in it.” The true reason was, probably, the bank had opposed him in his election, and he was determined to destroy it, regardless of all consequences. The watch-word then was “*Free trade and sailors’ rights.*” That is the watch-word to-day; it is the gist of the President’s (Cleveland) Message, just published. If he be able to establish free trade, he will be able, through Congress, to destroy the National Banks. With free trade, free whiskey, and the suppression of the Negro vote, he will be able to hold the reins of Government to his heart’s content.

After these events, nearly all my outstanding claims were valueless. Myself and family had lost about everything we had, except good health, poor clothes, and energy. We succeeded in paying all of our debts, however. I had gone security for several hundred dollars, and had to pay it. The wagon and team I had sold two years before, I had to take back at the same price they had been sold for. A man from Rush county, Indiana, was brought to Wabash by my team, and placed on my land as a tenant. The roads were so bad we could not get the team back, and it was left here until the last of January, 1841. I could not sell my house and lot for any thing, but rented it.



## LEAVE CONNERSVILLE FOR WABASH.

On the twenty-eighth day of January, 1841, my wife, baby, and I, left Connerville for Wabash, and landed here February fourth. The snow lay on the ground eight inches deep, and the weather was very cold. We got into a very poor log house—it was this or camp out.

Wabash was a small village then, and contained twenty-six families, equal to about one hundred and twenty-five inhabitants; nearly all lived in round-log cabins. Three-fourths of the town-plat stood in timber, and few streets were opened. The Miami Indians occupied the South bank of the Wabash River, and few white people lived in the Reserve. The Wabash and Erie Canal was finished from Fort Wayne to Lafayette, but not to the Lake. The Wabash River had to be ferried, from the time the Fall rains set in until the next June. To a practicing physician, this was attended with much expense and inconvenience. Where the Opera House now stands, on Market street down to the crossing of Miami street, was a large pond of water that seldom went dry, peopled with cat-fish, frogs, and other aquatic animals. The roads in the country lay along the Indian trails, marked out on trees and bushes. The statements above give an outline of our environment at this date—March 1st, 1841.

The furniture for my office and residence, and my medicine, had arrived, and I now put up my sign and went to work. My attention was for the first time called to a skin disease known as “Wabash scratches.” One-half the people had it, and no medicine had, as yet, been found to relieve it. Local treatment only had been used, and it failed. Constitutional as well as local medicines were put in requisition, which relieved in ten or fifteen days. Pneumonia was prevalent, followed by intermitting and remitting fevers. The Summer developed bilious diseases, and in the Fall there was typhoid fever.

In June, at the corner of Hill and Cass streets, lots Nos. 133, 134, 135, were bought, at a cost of three hundred dollars. I was bound

to erect a house on this property, worth four hundred dollars, in one year. One room of a large—contemplated—house was built and occupied in the last days of October; here we took it "Rough and tumble" with our neighbors. Wild game was plentiful and cheap; the country abounded in pawpaws and plums; in deer, raccoon, opossum, mink, muskrat and squirrels; in turkey, goose, duck, partridge, and pigeon; in fish, eels, rattlesnakes; in pestiferous flies and mosquitoes innumerable.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

On December 16th, 1841, I purchased of Joseph McClure a lot of land situated in Section 18, Township 27 North, Range 6 East, at a point where the Wabash Railroad now crosses Kentner's creek, containing 10 acres and 100 rods, with a saw mill on it (see life of William J. Ford), for which I gave in exchange 100 acres of land off the North end of the half-section described above. The Wabash and Erie Canal held a claim against this land for \$275 which McClure agreed to pay; so this mill cost me, in cash, \$275. I put on it, in repairs, \$175, and sold it in 1853 to the Wabash and Erie Railroad Co. for \$1000. At this date I bought several small tracts of land, and sold them at an advance. On the fifth day of October, 1846, I purchased eighteen feet of lot No. 28 (old plat) 58 feet North from the Southwest corner of said lot, for \$230. This lot had a cellar 18 x 48 feet, walled with stone, upon which stood a frame building two and one-half stories high, roofed, but not finished. This was a part of what was known as the "Mammoth Building." In the Winter of 1846-7 I had this building finished from cellar to garret. The first floor was fitted up for a drug store. I had purchased, in May of this year, in the City of New York, a large stock of drugs, medicines, paints, oils, dye-stuffs, etc., as the country would justify at that time. These goods were opened in a part of Jackson's warehouse, fitted up for this purpose. In the Spring of 1847 I moved into the new house. It was prepared especially for the drug business, and was very convenient. Business was continued here up to August 10th; at this time the Mammoth Building took fire and was consumed. My books were saved, and a few goods, that were much injured by water. My surgical instruments and some medical books, were burned. The few goods saved, were sold. I owed my creditors about \$1,000, but they proposed to give me all the goods I needed, and would wait until they could be paid for. The country was new, and had little money in it, so another risk was not taken.





## J. FORD, PHYSICIAN AND SURGEON.

I was now left in a very awkward predicament: had quit practicing medicine, was in debt, and collections were slow and difficult. And yet there was but one opportunity left; the old sign—J. Ford, Physician and Surgeon—was nailed up. By February, 1850, more calls came than could be attended to. James F. Breckner had read medicine with me, and had graduated in the Ohio Medical College, and was following his profession at Chili, Miami county, Indiana. He was sent for, and a co-partnership was formed: "J. Ford, M. D. and J. F. Breckner, M. D., Physicians and Surgeons," was the style of the firm.

In the Summer and Fall of 1853 we had an unusual number of cases of flux, or enteric fever; indeed, it prevailed all over the country, but more especially along the streams and in malarious districts. The disease was located in the lower bowel (colon and rectum) with a low grade of fever, partaking more or less of a typhoid type. It progressed slowly, and was almost unmanageable. The ordinary treatment in such cases was of little or no value; many cases died of exhaustion between the ninth and fifteenth days. Dr. Breckner and I had about eighty cases—forty each; we could not prescribe for more, as these cases required sixteen to eighteen hours each day, and a ride on horse-back of sixty miles each.

Our custom was, to write, in our prescription books, the condition of the patient, the rate of pulse, temperature, condition of the tongue, and all valuable symptoms. The prescriptions for the succeeding twenty-four hours, with the directions, also written. Medicines were prepared according to the written recipes; also, dinner and horse feed at A—— B——'s to-morrow noon. Each succeeding day, we exchanged books and routes, and by this arrangement I saw all of the patients every forty-eight hours. This gave better satisfaction, as Dr. B. was partly a stranger. Generally speaking, our treatment consisted of alteratives, ano-

dynes, astringents and diaphoretics, followed by tonics and stimulants.

The particular thing I desire to impress upon the mind of the reader, is this: Upon the abdomen of every patient, I placed a napkin, folded to four or more thicknesses, wet with water of a temperature just as it came from the well, or spring. This napkin was renewed every fifteen minutes, in a vessel of cold water, and squeezed out, not too dry, but so that the water would not run over his body. This was continued one hour; he was then told that "If the cold cloth is disagreeable to you, you may lay it aside." By this time the low temperature of the water had been carried through the abdominal walls and into the inflamed intestines, lowering the fever, relieving the pain, and greatly mitigating that peculiar depressed feeling so common in this disease. Almost invariably the sick man would now seize the napkin and sling it into the middle of the room, remarking—

"I don't want that nasty, wet thing on me any longer!"

The revulsive effect of the cold water would pass off, and the pain and depression return; in less than an hour he would call again for the wet cloth, and this he would keep on day and night as long as the pain and fever continued. These patients drank all the cold water they desired.

Up to this time, some four weeks, we had not lost a case, except a young babe whose father and mother were sick and no one cared for it. Other physicians in the village medicated their patients probably as skilfully as we, but they lost ten per cent. of all they treated; they did not use the cold water locally.

No man could long stand this excessively hard labor, the exposure and the worry I was subjected to, but it was suddenly cut short by an attack of typhoid fever. Dr. Breckner, as he told me afterward, had "Little or no faith in the water treatment," and stopped the use of it as soon as I left the field. In ten days he had lost six patients, every one of them prominent men. He had treated all these sick people on the same general principles, except

the cold water, that we had before. I make this last statement in evidence of its utility in this form of disease. I will say in this connection that we had an out-break of scarlet fever along the banks of the Salamonie River, in 1876, which resisted all forms of treatment. Many of the sick children died twelve hours after the attack. I treated a few of those cases with *ice-water* applied freely to the skin of the nude body, from twelve to twenty hours, and they all recovered. The parents were very much opposed to the use of ice-water; they said—"The cold will drive in the eruption, and that will kill the child!" In this case the heat was 105½ degrees, F. He was exceedingly "crazy," requiring two attendants to keep him in bed. His clothes were removed, and he was laid on an oil-cloth, to protect the bed, and covered with a sheet. The skin was thickened, of a dark red color, and very hot. His head and body was now washed with ice-water every five to ten minutes; in twenty minutes he became more quiet, and in half an hour was sound asleep. No water was applied, for another half-hour. He was then as insane as he was before, and the water was applied again until he became quiet. The temperature was now 104 degrees F. This procedure convinced the parents of the correctness of my statements, and the treatment was continued twenty-four hours without further opposition. Two other patients, in the same family, were treated in this way, and all recovered without any untoward sequel. I had not intended to write out this treatment so fully, but it was thought, as it had been mentioned, it was better to give such a description of it that the reader could make it practical, if necessary, when a malignant disease attacks an individual, and the routine fails. It requires a man of genius, or of practical aptitude of mind, to meet such an emergency.

#### TYPHOID FEVER.

In September, 1853, I had a severe attack of typhoid fever, which continued about four weeks before convalescence was fairly established: during a large portion of this time I was said to be insane. I recollect nothing that transpired, for about

eighteen days; in my frenzy I objected to Dr. Breckner's treatment, so Dr. C. V. N. Lent was called. He stayed with me two days; on his return he called on Dr. Hamilton, of LaGro, and said to him: "Dr. Ford is sick with typhoid fever, and I think he will die, but it devolves on you and I to medicate and care for him until he dies or gets well. You must see him to-night." Dr. H. was perhaps sixty years of age, and from the Green Isle, and he came. At this time my abdomen was swollen as tight as a drum, and covered by a large blister. He examined me carefully, percussed the abdomen, then he stood apparently hesitating in his mind, when Mrs. Ford said—

"Doctor, what do you think of his case?"

He hesitated a moment: then, looked her square in the eyes and politely replied—

"Jasus Christ! honey, dear, his *belly is full o' wund!*"

This was not said with an air of vulgarity, although it appeared so, but rather with sympathy and regard.

I thought he understood the pathology of my case, and was willing to take anything he desired to give me. By proper treatment and good nursing I weathered it out. I was not able to resume practice that Fall. I owe my good wife a debt of gratitude I shall never be able to pay, for the assiduous care and labor bestowed on me during that attack.

#### MEDICAL LECTURES.

After the necessary preparation, I and my oldest daughter, Mary E. Ford, started to Chicago, Illinois, October 28th, 1854. Mary was put in an English boarding school for ladies only, and I entered Rush Medical College for the Winter.

I had now practiced medicine and surgery twenty years, and was familiar with a large portion of the science, which enabled me to spend more time on a few branches. These were Anatomy, Surgery, Chemistry, and all the new discoveries in the various departments.



Small pox broke out in the city, as an epidemic, in January, 1855; over one thousand cases were reported the first day. Many of the students were affected, three of whom died. My daughter and I had a slight attack of varioloid, but seventeen of our boarders had sharp attacks. Five or six had never been vaccinated, three of whom had confluent pustules. The physicians of the city could not attend all the sick. By the request of Professors Davis and Brainard I medicated all the sick at our place, together with a number of the neighbors; they all recovered. I charged no fees. Many of the people called on me and gave thanks for my kindness, among whom was a Lutheran Minister. Two druggists called, to persuade me to stay in the city. They said—

“We know you understand your business, by the prescriptions you write.”

But the center of attraction for me was Wabash. I graduated M. D. on February 21st, 1855, and started home the next day. On February 24th, 1855, the Lake Erie, Wabash and St. Louis Railroad was finished to Wabash. The people then, as they do now, regarded the completion of this road as a great boon to the town and country. The freights were immediately lowered on the canal.

#### THE WAR OF 1861-5.

It is not intended to write a history of the War, only so far as I was immediately concerned with the passing events. When Fort Sumter was fired upon, the news flew with lightning speed over the whole country. The people were appalled, quit business, gathered in groups at their places of business or at the county seat, to hear the news and to discuss the impending catastrophe.

President Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand men, for ninety days. The people responded promptly, and Indiana furnished the Eighth Regiment of Volunteer Infantry, which rendezvoused at Indianapolis on the 20th day of April, 1861, and was mustered into service on the 23rd of April, by Colonel William

P. Benton. I was commissioned Surgeon; G. W. Edgerly, Assistant Surgeon; and James K. Bigelow, Hospital Steward. A cook was selected from the enlisted men. I had assigned to me in the ninety days service a three months supply of medicines and hospital stores, one ambulance, and one four-horse team to haul camp equipage and hospital supplies. The Government could not furnish surgical instruments, so I took my own, of which I had a fair supply. My dear old mother furnished me an ample supply of bandages and lint, manufactured with her own hands. The duties of an Army Surgeon, and military discipline, were not understood by me: but Captain Lee of Company E was a graduate of the military school at West Point, and had been a Regular Army officer for many years: under his tutelage the duties of a Surgeon were soon understood, as given in the Regulations of the Army of the United States—1857.

Up to this time I had been ordered about by every Captain and officer of higher rank in the Regiment, until their clashing orders became a burden that could not longer be borne. The Colonel was now informed that all orders emanating from him, other than those pertaining to the duties of the physician, would be obeyed with alacrity: but orders relating to the official duties of the Surgeon would *not* be obeyed unless it was convenient to do so. In a few days I was ordered to make out the discharge papers for a soldier, who was a sound, able-bodied man: he had not disobeyed orders, but had given offense and was perhaps troublesome. The facts were reported to headquarters, and the papers were not made out. I was ordered (verbally) under arrest. I reported to the Medical Director that I was under arrest, and gave the cause of it. The next day the Colonel was ordered to headquarters. I do not know what took place, but I was immediately released. All the commissioned officers seemed anxious to show their authority. I mention this affair, to show that we were raw troops! and, not knowing our respective duties, caused a large amount of friction among us, at first.

## CAMP MCCLELLAN.

On the first day of June, 1861, the Eighth Regiment was ordered into regular encampment, five miles East of Indianapolis, where military exercises were continued from day to day. On the seventeenth day of June, we received marching orders, and took cars at Indianapolis for Marietta, Ohio, via Cincinnati and Chillicothe. Here we were reviewed by Brigadier-General Rosecrans, and placed in his command. On the twenty-second, we were ordered to Clarksburg: here we went into camp on the mountain in the rear of the town. We remained here but a few days, then marched to Buchanan, where we arrived on the twenty-ninth. We left Buchanan July 7th, and came up to the Rebels at Rich Mountain, strongly fortified. At five o'clock A. M. on the eleventh of July, 1861, four hundred picked men of the Eighth Infantry marched in advance around the Rebels' left flank, and reached their rear about four o'clock, P. M. The Enemy had learned of our flank movement, and had posted pickets a half-mile in the rear of their breast-work. We struck them—or rather they struck us—when within twenty paces of their hiding place. Immediately they leaped over a precipice and were out of our range. No one was badly hurt, except Lieutenant Christ. Miller, of the Tenth Indiana Infantry, who was shot through the right lung. I sat on my horse at the head of the column, close to Miller when he fell, but was not hit. A line of battle was formed on the mountain within five hundred yards of the Enemy's breast-works. It was now past four o'clock P. M.: a drizzling rain was falling, and the air was foggy and cool. A man could not be seen over three or four hundred yards. General Rosecrans came and said—  
"Come along with me, and don't speak above your breath."

On foot we advanced down the face of the mountain, so as to get a good view of their position and works. Meantime, they were throwing solid shot and shell over our heads on the mountain, half a mile above us. We now, in line of battle, advanced down the face of the mountain, fronting their breast-works;

simultaneously, a spirited fire opened on both sides; it was a continuous roar, and I was terrified. James Emmet, one of our men, fell dead close to me; a "Hot streak" ran up my back into the brain—I was mad, and found myself hunting for a gun to avenge his death.

About this time, a spent plug of wood (sabot) from the Enemy's cannon struck me on the shin, making a small wound, but did no other damage. I was so green in military matters that I thought they were shooting blocks of wood at us. A strong impression came suddenly to my mind that I was not to be killed by a bullet; and, instantly, I was destitute of fear. The smoke from the guns, mixing with the fog, rolled quietly down the mountain; and by keeping in this, the Enemy could not see us, and over-shot us. Our men picked off their cannoneers so rapidly, they could not use their guns. We were now within one hundred and fifty paces of their lines. Our men were ordered to lay down among the bushes; firing ceased on both sides, and an awful stillness reigned. The Enemy raised up from behind his works and cheered lustily, thinking we had retreated. Sad thought! Our men, taking deliberate aim, let loose a broad-side into them. Before they recovered from this shock, our whole line was cheering down the mountain in double-quick, with an exulting yell, they leaped his breast-works, bayoneting the men inside; they threw down their arms, held up their hands, and the battle was ended.

Dr. J. K. Bigelow, in his "History of the Eighth Indiana Infantry," says—

"The Enemy was strongly posted behind rocks and temporary breast-works; and after a fiercely contested fight of two hours [we] succeeded in routing them, capturing 1,500 stand of arms, 5 guns, 11,000 prisoners, and all their camp equipage. Our Regiment lost 9 killed and 20 wounded."

General Rosecrans handled these raw troops and fought this battle with great skill. If he had pushed the men beyond the

smoke, or held them back until the smoke rolled away, so the Enemy could see them, our lines would have been decimated in a few minutes. Having the men to lie down out of sight was another skilfull manœuvre.

It may be said in this connection, that General McClellan lay in camp within nine hundred yards of the Enemy's lines, and could have brought forty pieces of artillery to bear on him, but fired not a gun.

It was now late in the evening, and we were all wet, but we gathered up the wounded of both sides and gave them shelter. We had no beds, no blankets, no dressings for the wounded men, and no lights. I had a few bandages, some ligature silk, and a pocket case of instruments. Every wounded man was examined; and, if losing too much blood, the arteries were tied up by torch-light. In the morning all was confusion. A board was placed on two barrels, on which a wounded Ohio man was laid; he was chloroformed, and the Surgeon was about to amputate his thigh in the upper third; he was very fleshy, weighing two hundred and twenty-five pounds. Just at this time about twenty-five men rode up, all dressed in officer's clothes, and surrounded me. No attention was paid to them—the knife was thrust through the thigh and the flaps formed and turned back; then the femur was sawed asunder, the arteries tied, the flaps brought together and stitched, and the bandages applied. This work occupied probably fifteen minutes. Not a word was spoken by the men; and no word was spoken by the Surgeon, only to his assistants.

An old gentleman dressed in military attire said—

“What is your name, sir?”

“My name, sir, is James Ford, Surgeon of the Eighth Indiana Infantry,” was my reply.

“I will make you Surgeon of this Hospital, sir,”—writing the order on his knee—“And I'll detail five other Surgeons to assist you. You call on me at Beverly, Virginia, for all supplies you need.”

General McClellan was hurrying his forces down to Beverly in order to head off Garnet, the Confederate General, at Laurel Hill, and the five Surgeons left with their Regiments and never reported for duty; thus leaving me with perhaps two hundred wounded men. A citizen from Indiana—afterward Colonel Grose, I think—procured a load of hay for beds, and busied himself in getting the men in a comfortable condition. General McClellan ordered me to “Treat the Confederate and Union men alike; make no distinction.” A soldier came and said—

“I’ll assist you, if you need help.”

“Are you a physician?”

“No; but I have read medicine.”

“I’ll try you,” was my reply. He was of great use to me. He was a man of good sense, and could see what was necessary without being told, and did it quickly. His name I have forgotten.

Now for four days I had put in sixteen to eighteen hours a day dressing wounds, extracting balls, reducing fractures, and amputating arms and legs, together with all other duties that became necessary, under the circumstances. Two arms were amputated at the shoulder joint, one including the head of the shoulder blade (scapula); one leg was amputated through the hip joint. I had three Rebel Surgeons in my care—Bondurant, Taylor, and Walk. Captain DeLaniel, of the Rebel Battery, had his arm torn off at the wrist. These physicians refused to amputate it, or to assist in any way in caring for their own men. I proposed to assist, or to amputate the Captain’s arm, but he refused.

I kept those wounded men on the Mountain ten days, until the inflammatory stage passed; then they were taken to Beverly. Now, by the order of General Rosecrans, I was relieved from duty for two weeks. I was nearly worn out. All those men who had capital operations performed on them, recovered. This unusual success was attributed to the pure, cool Mountain air.

“This being our first fight, and unaccustomed to the horrors of the battle-field and the sufferings of the wounded, we felt very

sorrowful for our brother soldiers, notwithstanding we were flushed with victory. We owe a debt of gratitude to Surgeon Ford, who was placed in charge of the wounded of both sides, for the industry and scientific manner in which our wounds were cared for." \*

On the 20th of July, General McClellan invited all the Colonels, Lieutenant-Colonels, and the Surgeon of the Eighth Regiment, who had been in the battle, to his Headquarters. All attended, and were cordially received. The cigars were passed around: this done, a canteen followed—as the writer neither smokes nor drinks he could not say what was in this vessel; but, presently, the Colonels became loquacious. The General manifested a sense of dignity, but was affable. Colonel W. P. Benton said—

“General, what do you think will be the result of this war?”

The General threw himself back, placing his legs upon the table, whipping away for several minutes: finally he replied—

“I do not know: but I think the parties will fight until they exhaust themselves, then they will make a compromise and *save slavery*.”

A pause: “Surgeon Ford here is an Abolitionist,” said Colonel Benton.

“You do me an injustice,” said I. “I would as lief steal a man’s horse as to steal his slave. Slavery was established by law, and I want it abolished by law!”

“O, I am that kind of an Abolitionist, myself,” said the General.

This conversation is given verbatim, for General McClellan was accused of being a Pro-Slavery advocate, which is not true.

The General praised the Colonels for their “Bravery and steadfastness under fire:” then, turning to me, he said—

“My Medical Director informs me that you are a skilfull operator, and I believe it, for I saw you amputate that large man’s

---

\* Bigelow’s History of the Eighth Regiment, page 8.

thigh, on the Mountain. I am no surgeon, but I thought you understood yourself. If you go into the Army again, I want you in my command.''

The canteen was empty. We bid the General adieu.

On July 21st, our time of service having expired, we started for Webster, on our return home. On the 27th of July we arrived at Indianapolis, and on the 6th day of August we were mustered out of service. During this Campaign the Regiment lost none by death from disease, or desertion.

#### THE THREE YEARS SERVICE.

The Eighth Regiment had offered its services to President Lincoln for three years, and it was accepted: but we were ordered back to Indianapolis, to fill up the Companies to one hundred men each, and reorganize.

On the twentieth day of August the Regiment rendezvoused at Indianapolis, preparatory to reorganization, and was again mustered into the Service of the United States, for three years. Surgeon Ford was mustered in on the 5th of September, 1861. The Regiment marched, one thousand strong, by rail, on the 10th of September, and arrived at St Louis the next day. We remained here but a few days, then took cars for Jefferson City, where we arrived September 14th. Here I organized a Hospital.

Our camp at Indianapolis was on the East bank of White River, adjoining Washington street. The River here runs in a Southwesterly direction, and was very low at this time. Thus, the Southwest winds carried the foul exhalations from decaying animal and vegetable matter in the bed of the stream, the fogs and malaria, into our camp. We lay in this camp twenty-one days; here we were all infected by germs of disease, which the following letter to the Pension Agent, at Washington, will explain:



WABASH, INDIANA, November 20th, 1882.

C. B. WALKER.

*Acting Commissioner,*

Washington, D. C.

“SIR: You ask me to ‘State what you [I] know of the nature of the disease called the ‘Georgetown sickness.’ I will give you, briefly, some of the prominent symptoms of this ‘sickness,’ in its inception and progress, its cause and results.

#### ENVIRONMENT.

“In September, 1861, I had been left in Hospital at Syracuse, Missouri, with a number of sick men. The Eighth Regiment of Indiana Volunteers had moved further up the Pacific Railroad, to Georgetown. Their camp was on a high, rolling prairie, sloping South, and underlaid by limestone rock. The Fall rains had set in, and we had several weeks of cool, cloudy, damp weather; the ground was saturated with water. Immediately below our camp a very strong spring flowed out from a heavy ledge of lime rock. The water, with the exception of a little lime, was sweet and pure. No swamps, or pools of stagnant water were near our camp. Most of our men were raw recruits, and discouraged; were home-sick [*malidia du pays*]: both officers and men did not know what their respective duties were, hence we had considerable friction in the Regiment. This was the condition of affairs when the Surgeon arrived at Georgetown. G. W. Edgerly, the Assistant Surgeon, had an attack of the disease, and soon left for home, at Muncietown, Indiana, where he died shortly after.

“The writer arrived at this place about the first of October, 1861, and found about three hundred men sick: cause, diarrhœa and dysentery.

“The reported well men were examined: the temperature was too low; pulse, from 60 to 65 per minute, were soft and lacked force; skin cool and clammy, tongue covered with brown or white fur, broad, with indentations of teeth in its sides: breath foul, and in many the abdomen was tender, though they had no diarrhœa;

there was a great indisposition to move about, they had no spirit, no hilarity; in short, the men seemed to be under the effect of some potent narcotic poison, that spent its force on the brain and nervous system. Ask him if he was sick, he would reply—

‘‘No, I am not sick, but I am not exactly well; can’t do any thing; don’t know what is the matter with me.’

‘‘At this stage many had a ‘shivering fit,’ followed by little reaction: its intermitting character, however, was of short duration, but active congestion of the colon and rectum supervened. The symptoms were tormina and tenesmus, with bloody mucous discharges. Now, in a day or two, the tongue became narrow and pointed, the papilla were enlarged and red, the upper lip contracted, the skin shriveled on the muscles of the face, giving the patient a shrunken, cadaverous appearance. As the patient grew weaker, the pulse became quickened and faster. He had a low grade of fever, depending doubtless on visceral irritation. This fever was called, by many of the physicians, ‘Typho-malarial.’ When the fever reached this stage, it ran the usual course of typhoid fever. Many died of exhaustion; others, after a protracted illness, slowly recovered, with an impaired or broken-down constitution.

‘‘The resident physicians informed me that this form of fever prevailed in that locality every Fall, mild among natives, but severe among strangers. The idea prevailed among the soldiers that the spring from which they took water was poisoned with arsenic [white oxide]. This was erroneous, for the following reasons, namely: 70 per cent. of the men who used this water were not affected by arsenical poison. Second, the sick men [30 per cent.] showed no symptoms of the toxical effect of this agent. Third, I made a test analysis of the water at the time, and found no trace of arsenic in it. Fourth, other Regiments used water from other springs, from brooks and wells in the immediate vicinity, and they had as many sick, and of the same type of disease, as we had. Fifth, the citizens of the village used water from

those springs at the same time that we did, and had little or no sickness.

“The above facts, we think, are sufficient to settle this question. The induction of this disease must be traced to some other locality.

“The *origin* of the Georgetown Sickness may be traced to the banks of White River, Indianapolis, Indiana—a sickly locality—where we were in camp, one thousand strong, on the 10th day of September, 1861 [I transcribe from my notes taken at the time], and landed at St. Louis, Missouri, and stayed three days at Jefferson Barracks. A number of men were sick of ague and dysentery. On September 23rd we proceeded by rail, via Syracuse, to Georgetown, where we remained in camp until October 14th, 1861. Here we suffered much from diarrhoea and dysentery, with a low grade of fever.

“It may be observed here that from September 10th to the 23rd we had one hundred and fifty men sick at this point. This time, thirteen days, was too short for its inception and development. On the 25th of October we started on our first march to Springfield, leaving from three hundred to four hundred men sick. The writer of this paper was left sick of typhoid fever, at Warsaw, with about twenty-five others, three of whom died.

“Several post mortem examinations of men who died of this fever, were made. Extensive organic changes were found in the colon and rectum: such as ulceration, congestion, and, in several cases, perforation of the bowel. Peyer's glands had suffered greatly. Recovery, in all these cases, was protracted: many died. Those that survived, came out with broken-down constitutions.

“It is hoped that this sketch will subserve the purpose for which it was written.

“Very respectfully yours,” JAMES FORD, M. D.

Late U. S. Surgeon.

The Army of the Southwest reached Springfield in fourteen days. Here “Surgeon Ford, though sick,” reached his command.

Price's Army retreated before the Federal troops arrived. Being one hundred and fifty miles from the base of our supplies, the Army returned to the Pacific Railroad at Otterville, and went into Winter quarters. I had chronic diarrhœa, was very weak, and unable for any duty. The Medical Director ordered me to Hospital at St. Louis, Missouri. I took the cars that evening, and arrived in the night; went to a hotel, and was unable to report to the Medical Director for three days.

General Pope had issued an order that no man should leave camp without his permission; of this, however, I knew nothing.

Meantime, Pope, hearing of my departure, telegraphed to General Halleck to have me put in *irons* and sent back immediately. Halleck sent his Orderlies all over the City of St. Louis, hunting me. The Medical Director here was the same man that had put me in charge of the Hospital at Rich Mountain, with whom I was, at least officially, well acquainted. When I reported, the Medical Director sprang up, giving me his hand, and said—

“Surgeon Ford, where in the world have you been!”—telling the facts as stated above—“How did you get here?”

“I got here by the order of Shofe, Pope's Medical Director,” was my reply, handing him the order.

“Now you stay here, and I will go and see Halleck, myself;” which he did. Halleck's order was—

“Tell him to go to his quarters and stay until he is able for duty; then report to me before he returns.”

This I did. In a few days I discovered that the river water that I drank, greatly increased my disease. I concluded to return to my Regiment and take my chances with the other sick men. I reported to General Halleck, and stated the facts in my case; he immediately wrote a letter to General Pope, stating the facts in my case, and freeing me from all blame. I reached Otterville in the evening, very much exhausted. Some of the officers of my Regiment said—

“Ford. Pope is going to give you Hell!”

All the Regimental officers called on me that evening, and seemed to dread the punishment. I did not tell them by what authority I got to St. Louis, nor that I had a letter from Halleck; but said—

“General Pope is a gentleman, and I think he will do me justice.”

Morning came, and I reported to General Pope's Headquarters, and saluted him. He began with expletives—

“Not virtuously; not innocently.  
Not happily; unfortunately.”—*Shakespeare.*

Until his tongue was paralyzed from over-work. The letter was handed to him, unsealed, as it came from Halleck. His blanched face crimsoned, as he said—

“Why in H——I didn't you hand me this at first? *Go to your quarters!*”

This order was gladly obeyed.

The next day the Medical Director, Shofe, came to me, stating that Pope had given him a terrible cursing for giving the Surgeon of the Eighth Regiment the order to go to St. Louis, and threatened to cashier him. The Surgeon was informed that Pope could not do that—that the General was interfering in a department not under his control; and he, himself, might be court-martialed for his acts; that the Surgeon was supreme in his department, as the General was in his.

After this “Unpleasantness” General Pope treated me with much kindness and consideration. He sent an Orderly to my room with the message—

“Report to Headquarters immediately, or as soon as you are able.”

The order was obeyed at once. He said—

“General Davis informs me that you are one of the best operators [surgical] in the Army. Now, I shall have use for all such men as you, shortly. What kind of a wife have you got?”

“The best woman in the world, sir,” was my reply.

“Does she know anything about nursing?”

“She has had ample experience in that line, sir.”

“I’m going to send you home, so you will be able for the Spring campaign.”

“General, I am not able to get home. I am unable to take care of myself.”

“Then I’ll send a man with you, but I will hold you responsible for his return.”

“If you will let me select my man, I will be responsible.”

“Select any man you please,” was his answer.”

The leaves of absence were made out, with the General’s name attached, and we left for home February 9th, 1862. I improved by rest and comfortable quarters, up to March 3rd: then I left for the Army, via St. Louis, Rolla, and Springfield. I here insert a note made at this time:

“If churches and school houses indicate the civilization and refinement of a people, Missouri must stand low in the scale; yet she has many good citizens, and it does me good to write it, that they are all Union men, and doing battle valiantly for the country.”

The command was reached March 17th, 1862, ten days after the battle of Pea Ridge.

In this battle we had 1,312 wounded men. The left wing of the Eighth Regiment, under Lieutenant-Colonel Shunk, lost in killed, wounded and missing, thirty-eight men. All the Rebel wounded and killed were left in our hands. The Indiana Brigade had 157 wounded men.

On the 6th of April the Army moved in the direction of Forsyth, Missouri, over the Ozark Mountains, and camped on Bull Creek: on the 20th we proceeded down White River and across the country to Batesville and Sulphur Rock, Arkansas. Our rations being exhausted before we left this point, the Commissary issued to each man, daily, *four ears of corn*, with some “Sow-belly,” which constituted all the rations we had. On the 22nd of

June we left Sulphur Rock, and passed down White River until we arrived at Clarendon: thence to Helena, where we arrived on the 13th of July. This campaign lasted over seven months; we had traveled nearly one thousand miles, and subsisted off the country already devastated by the Enemy.

We camped on the West side of the Mississippi River, one mile above Helena, where the end of Crawley's bridge strikes the River. The River here runs from the Northeast, then turns South. From our camp we could see down the center of the stream for miles.

The South wind, coming up the River, carried with it the fog, malaria, and the germs of disease, into our camp. As soon as the air in the evening reached the dew-point, we were submerged in darkness, until the Sun in the morning dispelled the fog. I had, years before this, discovered the law by which local currents of air were governed in moving from place to place; thus enabling me to pre-determine, accurately, the healthfulness of any locality. A few days before this, Colonel William P. Benton, of the Eighth Indiana Infantry, was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General; I ranked as Brigade Surgeon, consequently was one of his Staff Officers. Our tents stood close together, within twenty feet of the river. The General was told that this was a very unhealthy locality; that we should all be sick here in ten days.

"Why do you think so?" he asked.

The reason was given as stated above. After reflecting a few moments, he said—

"O, d——n your theory, Ford: there is nothing in it!"

#### DEMONSTRATING HIS THEORY.

On the third morning after this colloquy, I had an attack of cholera morbus, and was very sick: was leaning over a log that the reflux water had left on the River bank, and was vomiting freely. General Benton, hearing the noise, came out, rubbing his eyes, and said—

“Colonel Shunk! Major Parrish! Come and see Dr. Ford demonstrate his *Theory*! Ha!-ha!-ha!”

They came, but could not see where the “Fun” came in, and did not laugh. The Surgeon kept his bed two days. By this time the First Indiana Battery, Captain Clouse, had not enough well men to care for their horses, and called on General Benton for a detail. The Eighth and Eighteenth Regiments, our Brigade, were suffering severely. We camped at this place on the 13th of July, 1862, and on the morning of the 23rd inst. a noise was heard in front of my tent. The Author, though sick, went out, and saw Brigadier-General W. P. Benton leaning over the same log, vomiting severely.

“You are demonstrating my *Theory*, General,” I said. “Come out here, Colonel Shunk and Major Parrish, and see the General demonstrate my *Theory*!”

“*You git!*—*God*——”

The hard-tack that had been eaten the day before was on its way to the Mississippi, and blocked the road so the sentence was never finished. The completeness of the demonstration, however, was never called in question afterward.

On the morning of the 26th of July, an Orderly handed me an order which read thus:

#### HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE SOUTHWEST.

The compliments of Brig. Gen. W. P. Benton, to

SURGEON FORD.

“SIR: You will be prepared to move, to-morrow morning, at six o'clock, sharp.”

WM. P. BENTON,

*Brigadier-General, Commanding.*

The next morning General Benton, Colonel Shunk, Major Parrish and Surgeon Ford, started. When outside the camp General Benton said—



' Now, Surgeon Ford, we are going to hunt for a healthier camp. You may make your own selection. I shall hold you responsible for the health of the men.'

'If you let me make my own selection, I will be responsible,' was the answer.

A selection was made one-half mile West of the river, out of the line of the river fogs and away from the river water, and on the opposite side of Crawley's bridge. Two weeks after our Brigade settled in the new quarters, the men never were in finer spirits, and in better trim for duty.

Here the Surgeon's quarterly report was made out, and forwarded to the Surgeon-General at Washington, D. C. I was still sick of chronic diarrhœa, contracted in Missouri, but able to attend to the official business of the Brigade. August 30th, 1862, General Curtiss granted me a leave of absence for thirty days. About fifty sick men, with their rations and accoutrements, were put on the steamboat McDowell, to be sent to a Hospital above Cairo, Illinois. They were in the care and under the command of Surgeon Ford, on his way home. We did not reach Cairo until the 3rd of September. Here I was relieved of my command, had my leave countersigned by the Post Marshal, and took cars for home, where I arrived the next day.

At the end of thirty days I was not fit for duty, and had my leave renewed at Indianapolis, for thirty days more. On the 3rd of November, 1862, I took sleeper for St. Louis. Purchased here the "Physical Geography of the Sea," by F. M. Maury. Left St. Louis November 7th for Iron Mountain, Missouri: put up at the Chilis house, very tired. My notes, written at the time, ran thus:

"This country is broken and mountainous: Iron Mountain is of conical shape, 780 feet high. The Mountain is of solid rock, composed of iron sulphide, yielding from 55 to 90 per cent. of metal. Shepard's Mountain, situated one-half mile west of this is also a mine of magnetic iron ore, finer than the other. These mines are inexhaustible. This formation appears to be of recent

date, but primitive in character; granite rocks abounding all over the hills, for thirty to forty miles around.''

Left here in an ambulance November 11th, and reached Camp Steel, at Patterson, Wayne county, Missouri, November 12th. Here we erected a stockade fort and a high flag-staff; put in the fortification a magazine under ground, for ammunition. November 23rd, started for Black River. January 16th, 1863, I ordered Surgeon Bruce, my Assistant, to take eighteen sick men with five tents, to the Hospital, with cooking vessels; erect the tents, put the men in them, and make them comfortable, give them treatment, etc. He erected two wedge-tents, put eight men in them, and left ten without any shelter, without any means of cooking, without medicine, or any assistance. This was not known to me for three days. He was told that charges would be preferred against him for dereliction of duty; he knew what that meant, and at once handed in his resignation. It was approved by all his superior officers, and he left the Army the next day.

It being impossible to provision the Army so far from our base of supplies, we were ordered to 'About face, and return to Middle Brook, Missouri, which place we reached February 27th; after one of the hardest marches on record.''

Here, between the 5th and 10th of March, I was appointed 'Medical Director in the Field,' which placed me on General Davidson's staff. My Brigade having marched for Vicksburg, by St. Genevieve, Missouri, my chest, containing a new suit of military clothes, boots, books, and all other property belonging to me was sent with the Eighth Regiment to Millikin's Bend, where they were ordered to leave all trunks, tents, and hospital stores, in the hands of some officer. This is the last I ever heard of my property.

About the 1st of April, my health not improving, General Davidson advised me to go home, as he thought I would not live long, unless I improved. He gave me a leave of absence for 30 days, and a bottle of Bourbon whiskey, which I could not, and did

not, drink, though I appreciated his kindness. The next day I started for St. Louis, and reached the city in the evening; then took a large dose of opium, and entered a sleeper for Indianapolis. Happy in the arms of Morpheus until morning, then some one was tugging at me to get up, and the train was standing still, at the point of destination. Blessed opium! thought I. That evening, home, "Sweet home," was reached.\*

I had been struggling with chronic diarrhœa and indigestion, now and again, for the last year and a half; but at this particular time, was very thin in flesh, weak, sick, and had been confined to bed about six weeks; had night sweats, imperfect digestion and assimilation. My friends thought I would die. A German friend came to me and enquired about my case, and said—

"Ah, Toc, you trinks some lager beer, you kits besser— prings you some."

He was told that "All stimulants burn my stomach; I can't drink them."

"O, you trinks lager!"

In half an hour he brought a bottle of foaming beer, and left. A gill of it was drank, and unexpectedly, it allayed that deep sense of lassitude and depression, from which I suffered greatly. This relief arose from the anæsthetic effect of the carbonic acid gas, and the hops in the beer, and not from the small amount of alcohol in it. In a few days my appetite returned, and I slowly recovered.

I make this statement, as I fully believe this beer saved my life. I take the liberty to say that Philip Alber manufactured this beer himself, and brought it to me as an act of kindness; and I have felt a lively sense of gratitude to my friend ever since.

From November, 1861, to June 5th, 1863, I had scarcely passed a well day. My first attack was typhoid fever, with ulceration of Pier's glands; from which I have never recovered. Ulceration of

---

\* This morning, January 19th, 1888, at six o'clock, 26 years ago, I first saw the light of day, and am now, Deo gratias, enjoying a fair degree of health and strength.

the rectum still continues. I had a great desire to continue in the Army; was known as a "Skilled Surgeon." Always stood well with the Medical Director and the Commanding Generals. My chief desire was to help put down this horrid Rebellion; but it was evident that my usefulness in the Army had ceased; that it was my duty to resign, and give place to some efficient man. I received an honorable discharge, signed by General U. S. Grant, June 5th, 1863.

Two years passed before I was able to do much professional work. I needed pure air, sunshine, digestible food, regular hours, and moderate exercise.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

I owned at this time two hundred and twenty-seven acres of land, with about one hundred acres in cultivation. This farm is situated in Section 5, Township 27 North, Range 6 East. My precarious health, my wife and five children all depending on me for support, gave me much solicitude. I concluded to sell my farm, pay off all my debts, which were small, and place the balance of the money at interest, where the income would not depend on the season, but be sure and regular.

In the Spring of 1864 I sold this farm to Mathias Farr and William Wallace, including the growing crops, for \$10,080. Of this, \$7,000 were placed in "Seven-Thirty Government Bonds"—as they were called. These bonds yielded about \$500 per annum, which was more than the farm would pay.

I needed a cow pasture close to the town, and bought of Jacob C. Arnett and wife, out-lot No. 26, in Sub-division of the Charley Section, May 7th, 1863, containing ten acres; price, \$1,800. In the Spring of 1864 I divided the North half into building lots, and by the following Christmas had closed out the whole plat, yielding \$1,805, leaving eight acres without cost, and five dollars to celebrate the advent of Santa Claus. Off the Northeast corner of this land I sold to the Chippewa Plank Road Company three lots, for \$350. In the Summer of 1875, I built a dwelling house on this land, costing \$1,100; it, with two lots, I gave to my son, William Jesse Ford, who had been married to Mary J. Conda, on the 31st day of December, 1874, for \$1,000, as a part of his distributive share of my estate. On the 7th day of July, 1882, I sold the East half to Levi Wilson for \$1,000, and the remainder I sold to Philip Hipkind for \$1,000, September 12th, 1883. In dividing this land, a fraction, equal to one half-lot, was missed, which belongs to me yet; it is

worth \$100. Several crops, of various kinds, were grown on it, and a large quantity of building stone and flagging were taken from its quarries, equaling in all not less than \$4,000 clear profit.

On March 20th, 1864, I purchased a Nursery of fruit trees of various kinds, evergreens and shrubbery, for which I paid to Daniel Jones \$1,700; then immediately sold one-half interest in the evergreens and shrubbery for \$377, reducing my interest to \$1,322. Our sales were limited this Spring, as we had no solicitors in the field taking orders for trees. It was not expected that much money would be made from this enterprise; but it was expected the profits would come in the form of health and happiness; a wealth more precious than silver and gold. Then, too, I had two young sons so full of vitality they did not know what to do with it or themselves. They believed in the conservation of energy; I believed in the transmutation of energy into muscle, brain and work. Thus, with the plow, the hoe, the pruning knife, the work began; "Funny" at first, indeed, but by noon we had less noise; and, when the evening shades lengthened, they were as still as death, and did not go "Scalihootin'" around town that night. The writer, too, was worse played-out than the boys. Thus, after a sound sleep and a late breakfast, the "Laddies" had the horse and buggy at the post, and we all embarked for the nursery again. From day to day we repeated these operations, until our muscles were strengthened and enured to the work. Very little labor was done by me, but I made the effort; and, when weary, would lie down then and there, on the fresh dug earth, to rest, in the sunshine, without feeling faint. In a week my blanched face was as brown as a sailor's. My appetite increased, digestion improved, and assimilation better, all resulting in better health.

In the Spring of 1865 this nursery was sold to Dr. Thompson. He carried on this business through the Spring and Summer, but in the Fall he died of typhoid fever. He was thought to be responsible for all his contracts; but, after his death, his wife showed that their property had been purchased with her money, and could not be taken for his debts. Thus in this enterprise I lost about \$1,200.

#### PURCHASE A DRUG STORE.

My health at this date was not good. The excessive labor in getting from place to place, and the loss of sleep and rest, were too much for me; it kept a sense of weariness in my mind night and day. Idleness I could not endure; consequently, I bought an interest in a drug store. This establishment belonged to Price and T. McConn; the latter was a plasterer by trade, and knew nothing about the business. I bought his interest, including notes

and accounts, and assumed one-half of all debts, which were warranted not to exceed \$2,000. This purchase was made in January, 1866. John G. Price sold his interest to Joseph M. Thompson early in the Summer of 1867, and left this county. I bought Thompson's interest in the following July or August, and ended the partnership business.

A full history of this transaction would be tiresome and uninteresting to the reader; consequently, the out-come only, will be given. Thompson's sale was correct and satisfactory; but the statements of McConn and J. G. Price, as to the amount of indebtedness, were false, as the records of the Circuit Court will show. Then, by rascality, duplicity, lying, and false swearing, they cheated me out of \$3,350.

Money-getting is the order of this age; men are not to be trusted in any transaction, if there be money in it.

In the winter of 1866-7 I went to Philadelphia, and took a course of instruction in eye and ear surgery, with the intention of doing an office and city practice; purchased all necessary instruments and all necessary apparatus, and, among other things, \$100 worth of artificial eyes. The aggregate cost of this enterprise was five hundred dollars. It was found that there were not enough cases in a country practice to justify such an outlay.

In the Spring of 1867 this drug store was sold. The close confinement in the store was as hard on me as the over-work in the practice of medicine; for this cause it was offered for sale, and soon after sold to James Barnhardt for \$4,720. 166 acres of land was taken in part pay. This land is situated seven miles North of Wabash, in the Northeast part of Section 5, Township 28 North, Range 6 East. Consideration, \$3,720.

#### ERECTION OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

During the year 1865 the Christian congregation, worshipping in the town of Wabash, had no house. A lot had been purchased some years before, for two hundred dollars. At a meeting held for this purpose it was resolved that this congregation should build a church; and that Dr. James Ford should draw the plans and specifications for the house; to be erected of stone and brick, with a basement story of twelve feet in the clear. The size of the

building, to be seventy-seven feet long by fifty-four feet front, with a tower in front center. The plans were drawn, and specifications made, and submitted to the Building committee, who adopted them. The audience room was constructed with reference to the '*Laws of Acoustics.*' This was a complete success. At this juncture the congregation was composed of well-to-do people; but they had little wealth of money, but great wealth of energy and perseverance. They were not able to have trimmings of cut stone, but had them made of brick. This required over eighty forms of brick. A carpenter was employed to make the molds, but the architect had to stand by him and show him how they should be made. This required so much of his time, and was so expensive, that he made them himself, without cost. Where few of a kind were needed, they were cut with a knife while the brick were in a plastic condition. J. H., now Dr. James Henry Ford, cut hundreds of them, without cost to the Church. The foundation and walls were put three feet above the second floor this year, and it was finished in 1866.

We asked the good people of Wabash to help us, and they responded generously: especially those who did not belong to any religious organization, and some that did belong to other Churches. The Church members, many of them, denied themselves of many of the comforts of life, and wore their old clothes longer than they were decent, in order to pay for their church. It was for the love of God and humanity they did it, and not for self-aggrandizement.

The architectural beauty of this building was greatly injured by the changes made in the plan and execution of the work. The roof, as drawn, was steep, so as to admit of a vaulted ceiling inside, and the spire extended up over one hundred feet above the pavement. These changes were made by the Building Committee, in order to cheapen the work; but, instead, the expense was greatly increased before the work was completed. This property has cost about \$16,000. Our children's children will worship here, if this house is cared for.

## COPARTNERSHIP WITH DR. JAMES L. DICKEN.

Dr. J. L. Dicken came to me and desired to go into the practice of medicine with me, stating that—

“You have more practice than you can attend to; I will take the heavy work off you, and you may attend to the diseases of the eye and ear. I have a good practice, but much of it is too far away.”

After thinking about this business a few days, I concluded to accept the offer.

On the 15th day of January, 1869, J. L. Dicken and the Author entered into copartnership, in the practice of medicine and surgery, for three years; commencing on the 5th day of January, 1869, and terminating on January 15th, 1872. This man's qualifications were good; he had a good knowledge of anatomy, was a fair surgeon, and capable of doing a large practice; but, on the other hand, he had some disqualifying habits. He had an almost inexhaustible fund of anecdotes and funny tales, which he used on all occasions to his own hurt. The “Fine practice” he spoke of, was too far away and among the poorer class of people, who never paid for his services. Thus, he was rather unprofitable to me, and increased, rather than decreased, my long and hard rides. He was anxious to do this work, but the people refused to take him.

“Nihil, nihilo, fit.”

After the copartnership with J. L. Dicken ended, January 15th, 1872, I took my son, James Henry Ford, M. D., in my office, and gave him an interest in the practice of medicine, and continued with him until the year 1881: drawing off gradually, and leaving the practice in his hands.

The practice of medicine and surgery had been my life-work, and I had kept abreast of the times in all the improvements and new discoveries, up to date; but the end had come; and, gracefully, I laid off my armour.



For further notice of this eight years labor, see biography of J. H. Ford.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

On the first day of January, 1874, I sold to Jacob Sayre one hundred and sixty-six acres of land, which I had received in part payment for the drug store.

#### PURCHASE A LARGE FARM.

I purchased the North half of Section 33, and the Southeast quarter of Section 28, in Township 24, Range 11 East. Also, an eighty acre lot in Section 13, Township 23 North, and Range 11 East, near the town of Trenton; all situated in Blackford county, Indiana. It was purchased of the Aetna Life Insurance Company, on the 17th day of May, 1881; consideration, \$7,000. But this is not all of the cost of this land. After I had entered into a written contract with their Agent, and had placed in bank \$4,000 subject to his order, another party offered \$250 more. The Agent now refused to let me have it, unless I gave this additional sum. To avoid a lawsuit, I gave it; but when the deed came the consideration was \$7,000. Then who got the \$250? I paid the Agent \$95, which he claimed for making the loan of the other \$3,000. The contract was for a "Deed in fee simple;" but said Company, in their deed, said, "We warrant and defend against all *contracts made by us!*" There was an old judgment rendered against this land, before the Life Company bought it, which failed to get in the Abstract of Title; but the Company knew of it before they sold to me, hence this peculiar feature of the deed. I learned of this after I had spent one thousand dollars in improvements. This cost me \$200 more. Thus, they, through their Agent, caused me to pay \$545 more than I agreed to pay. My experience with the New York Life, and the Aetna, convinces me that they are *intentionally dishonest*, and take the advantage of their customers, whenever the law will not prohibit them. I think an investigation of their past acts will confirm these statements.

I sold the land near Trenton, in Section 15, Township 23, to William and Reuben Whitaker for \$1,400, on the 5th day of July, 1881, and applied the money in payment of the other land.

#### POLITICAL.

In politics, I was a Whig; believed in protecting our industries against foreign labor and capital; in building up a great and independent nation, capable of enacting wise laws, educating her

children, developing mines; of manufacturing her own machinery, and of building up her own commerce. This we have done! The progress of this Nation, in the Nineteenth Century, is unparalleled by any people in the World. While other Nations are studying and preparing to destroy their neighbors, we are engaged in the peaceable pursuits of agriculture and commerce. The last relic of barbarism has yielded, not without great cost of life and treasure, before the light of this age; *Slavery is dead!*

If the Press were confined to the truth; Civil Service carried out in good faith; and the time of service of the President confined to one term, the perpetuity of this Nation should continue through the ages. The lying demagogue soon dies from his own poison.

#### RELIGION.

I had committed the "Shorter Catechism" to memory when a child, and the "*Chief end of man*" became the "*Puzzle*." When fully grown, I could not reconcile the statements in the third chapter of Genesis with this, and what followed in other books of the Bible.

I will give a statement of the manner this subject appeared to me sixty-five years ago:

That God should create millions of human beings and place them in a condition that they could neither turn to the right nor to the left to escape an eternal punishment; not by any premeditated act of Adam and Eve, but by the allurements and deception of a talking serpent, they were induced to eat of the forbidden fruit. "In His sight all things are open and manifest; His knowledge is infinite, infallible, and independent upon the creature; so as nothing is to Him contingent or uncertain."—(Confession of Faith, p. 23.)

As God ordains "Whatsoever comes to pass," it follows, therefore, that there was no uncertainty or contingency in this whole scheme. God laid the plans; he made the Devil his executive officer; and Adam and Eve the culprits—tried and condemned.

Did God set a trap to catch his innocent children? Did He make a talking serpent to spring that trap? Where does the responsibility of this disobedience rest? Must the people now living suffer the penalty—*death*? What was the mental condition of Adam and Eve at this time? They “Neither knew good nor evil;” they did not know that they were naked; they were blind; they could not reason; they were made as the beasts of the field were—not capable of reason; until the tempter told them that “God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and ye shall be as Gods, knowing good and evil.”—(Genesis iii, 5.) “This, their sin, God was pleased according to His wise and holy council, to permit, having purposed to order it, to His own glory.”—(Confession of Faith, p. 42.)

The Savage delights in the number of scalps he takes before he roasts his victims at the stake. Is this the kind of glory Deity delights in? Does a finite act merit an eternal punishment? The burnt victim, being dead, feels no more pain; but this God gives His victim an indestructible body and an endless life in torment to increase His glory! Again, as the human family increase in number, His glory increases in the same ratio! I have made these statements and propounded these questions, which the reader may study and answer to suit himself. They are *puzzles* to me, but they are the doctrines taught sixty-five years ago.

In this connection I desire to make another statement:

Unto the woman He said. “I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be unto thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.” He would greatly multiply her sorrow in bringing forth children; and, also, increase the number, that the sorrow might the oftener recur!

Does God hold woman in contempt, that He should give her intense and oft-repeated suffering for obeying the command to “Multiply and replenish,” because she had eaten of the forbidden fruit? She suffered the “Thorns and thistles” with Adam, and

this in addition: but, worst of all, "He shall rule over thee!" Adam, the tyrant! Eve, the slave!! She was considered and held as property: "Thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's wife—nor his ox." The God (Elohim) of the Old Testament permitted polygamy, slavery, and divorce, without the wife's consent!

It has been the writer's duty, through the course of a long life, to attend, probably, two thousand cases of maternity. To stand by an innocent woman, an idle spectator, powerless to relieve her terrible throes of labor: without having my sympathy drawn out in her behalf, was impossible: I could not resist the enmity in my soul against this, to me, unmerited imposition! If her baby die, shall it be punished to all eternity?

The Commentaries inform us that the first ten chapters of Genesis are an older document than those following. "Opinions have differed whether we ought to take the story of the Fall, in Genesis third, to be a literal statement of facts, or whether we should regard it as an allegory."—(Smith's Bible Dictionary, p. 286.) The Divine Name used in the first chapter of Genesis is (plural) "Elohim;" the second is "Jehovah." The Elohist document is the oldest: its author is unknown. The Jehovistic was probably written by the author of the Pentateuch. "Of the two principal documents, the Elohist is the earlier, and in some instances there seems to have been so complete a fusion of the two principle documents, Elohist and Jehovistic, that it is no longer possible to accurately distinguish them, [Ibid.] "Subsequently, three documents united and arranged by a fourth person, who acted as editor of the whole." [Ibid 286.]

The reader can easily see the difficulties an inquiring mind would have in reaching a conclusion touching the subjects treated in the beginning of this article.

One idea stands out in bold relief, that the writer of Genesis, has given his God the character of the people among whom he lived. He was of a nomadic race, a keeper of cattle, and a savage dwelling in tents; the slightest opposition to his behest was death.

The Law was faulty. It could not make the comers thereto perfect; therefore it was abolished. "As a means of justification or salvation," says Smith, "It ought never to have been regarded, even before Christ. It seems clear enough that \* \* \* as a whole it ended with the Jewish Dispensation. It was a covenant of death." Happy the day when the Law was abrogated!

## APOLOGIA PROFIDA NOSTRA.

## JESUS, THE CHRIST.

Christ came into the world not as a slave-holder; not as a polygamist; not as a Shylock; not as a tyrant; *but as a Saviour, the Messiah, the Anointed, a Prophet, a Priest, and a King* "Whose business it should be to set the people *free from sin and teach them the ways of God.*" Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant, is the head of the Church, whose blessings extend to the whole world. He saves men, not in their sins, but from all iniquity by teaching them to live a holy life. He took away the old covenant, nailing it to the cross; but he gave us a new and better covenant, with better promises. He burst the bars of death and triumphed over the grave to ratify its blessings to us.

"All hail the power of Jesus' name.  
Let Angels prostrate fall;  
Bring forth the royal diadem.  
And crown Him Lord of all."

I joined the Christian church at Connersville in the Summer of 1838, under the administration of John O. Cane.

This is the way it came about:

He represented Jesus, the Christ, as a noble personage, who went about doing good, a friend, a lovable man; unlike Moses, who taught more Sheol than Heaven. This man was God's Son in the flesh, the Messiah. He came to redeem men from the thralldom of sin, and to give him the *Law of Life and Liberty*. There was nothing in the lives of Plutarch, or any other biography to equal this. First, I read the New Testament with care

and found that "Faith" in the Lord Jesus was the first step toward a better life. Second, I hated wickedness, and was sorry that I had failed to discover this before. I had made so many mistakes, both in commission and in omission. I resolved to free myself from them and escape the penalty which immediately follows. I could not increase God's happiness, but could enhance my own by obeying His Commands. I was a penitent believer. Third, In accordance with the law of life, it became necessary for me to be baptized—to die a figurative death; to pass through a figurative burial, and to be figuratively raised from the dead. "Know ye not that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore we are buried with Him in baptism into death; that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the Father, even so we should be raised up, and also walk in a new life."—Romans, vi, 3-4. A few drops of water falling on a believer's head, to my mind, lacked the substance of the figure; therefore I was immersed in Whitewater River by John O. Cane, for the remission of sin. The act was never regretted.

"Joy to the world, the Lord has come,  
Let earth receive her King;  
Let every heart prepare him room,  
And heaven and nature sing."

—Watts.

I can not pursue this subject further, but have tried to get down to the bed-rock of fact, and to make virtue the means, and happiness the end.

"Teach me to feel another's woe,  
To hide the fault I see;  
That mercy I to others show,  
That mercy show to me.  
"Mean though I am, not wholly so,  
Since quicken'd by Thy breath,  
O lead me wheresoe'er I go  
Through this day's life or death."

—Pope.

## SUNDAY SCHOOL.

In the year 1843 the town of Wabash, now city, contained about twenty families. The Miami Indians occupied the territory South of the Wabash River, and the country was almost a dense wilderness. A three months school was taught in the Winter, but none in the Summer. The inhabitants were not blessed with an abundance, and our children were growing up in ignorance; many of them hatless, barefooted, ragged and dirty. Our first temples were the sylvan arches of the forest. Aristocracy was a child of the Orient, and had no relatives in this country. Here, in short, a large per cent. of this raw material was organized into a Sunday school, and the writer was Superintendent and teacher of the Bible class for seventeen years. This School became quite popular; frequently the parents and often the Ministers attended and took part in its deliberations.

The last year I taught, this question was propounded to the Bible class, which consisted principally of young ladies and gentlemen:

“When, in becoming Christians, do we reach the Blood of the Redeemer?”

The Epistle to the Hebrews, together with the Pentateuch, was under consideration.

This question produced great excitement among the old and the young: they had never thought of it before, presented in this way. The Law, given at Sinai, was called a “Will,” a “Testament,” a “Covenant,” a contract made by God himself, and was ratified or made binding on the children of Israel by the shedding of the blood of beasts. Christ was born under the Law and could not escape its penalty, nor institute a new Will or Covenant while the first was in force. Said He—

“Lo, I come to do Thy will, O God. He taketh away the first that He may establish the second. By the which Will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Christ once for all.”

—Hebrews, x, 9-10.

Then Christ took away the old Covenant by "Nailing it to the Cross." This done, He was at liberty to "Establish" a new Covenant, Will, or Contract, and He sanctified it by shedding His own blood—not to be applied directly to the people, but to establish or ratify the *New Law*; so, when we come under the New Law we come to the blood of "The Christ," and have escaped the penalty of the old, are free from sin—new creatures.

After some four months study the question was asked, "When do we come to the blood of Christ?" The answer came—

*"When we enter into the New Covenant we come to the Blood."*

My pupils had enquired of their parents and Ministers, but failed to get a satisfactory answer; but when they "Dug it out" themselves, they were wonderfully pleased with their victory.

Lack of space forbids further notice, but now after the lapse of thirty years, I see many of those pupils standing in their places, obeying every proper demand the State and society requires of them, which is very gratifying to me.

#### SCIENCE AND RELIGION.

A hot war is now in progress between the Theologians on the one side, and the Scientists on the other. Some Theologians see no diversity between Science and Christianity—take a broad and liberal view of both, and use the former to illustrate the latter; while others of the same School look on all concessions in this direction as rank infidelity. A few Scientists agree with the Liberal Theologians, and form a third party, at peace with each other. The other Scientists are Agnostic—discarding all intelligent design in nature.

The question will not be discussed by the writer, only so far as to show where he stands.

I quote from M. Jenet: "Les causes finales"—"The present determined by the future."

"Consider what is implied by the egg of a bird. In the mystery and night of incubation, there comes, by the incubation, an incredible number of causes: A living machine within the egg. It is



absolutely separated from the external world, but every part is related to some future use. The outward physical world which the creature is to inhabit is wholly divided by impenetrable veils from this internal laboratory; but a pre-established harmony exists between them. Without, there is light; within, an optical machine adapted to it. Without, there is sound; within, an acoustic apparatus. Without, are vegetables and animals; within, organs for their reception and assimilation. Without, is air; within, lungs with which to breathe it. Without, oxygen; within, blood to be oxygenated. Without, is earth; within, feet are being made to walk on it. Without, is the atmosphere; within, are wings with which to fly through it. If we exclude design, this is what Nature is supposed to be doing." But above and beyond these self-evident truths, there were *Wisdom to contrive. Power to execute, and Goodness to happyfy—these are the attributes of God.*

"The highest link in Nature's chain is fastened to the foot of Jupiter's chair."—Bacon.

Moses, the Law-giver, was commissioned by God to lead the Children of Israel out of bondage, and to give them the Law (Decalogue) and place them in the land that had been promised to Abraham "For an inheritance;" the means to accomplish this great work were also assured. The line and scope of this inspiration began and ended when this work was finished. His commission did not extend to scientific subjects, but, in all else, he gave the ideas held by the people of that age, touching the subjects of Astronomy, Geology, and all other Scientific matters. It is said "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God." This is true in relation to man's obligation to his Divine Father, but will not hold good when applied to scientific subjects; thus, the Idea of Plenary Inspiration must be given up. For further information see Keto's Biblical Dictionary under the word "Firmament;" also, Smith's Dictionary on the same word. If the Hebrew word "Rakiah—firmament—does not harmonize with strict philosophical truth, the answer to such an objection is, "that the writer des-

*cribes things as they appear rather than as they are.*' (Ibid) This concession holds good, doubtless, through all the Sacred writings where it refers to scientific matters.

Holding this view, there is no discrepancy between science and religion: they stand on parallel lines—the former elucidating the power, wisdom and goodness of God; the latter, involving our happiness here and eternal bliss hereafter.

The reader will notice that all quotations used in these pages are taken from Orthodox Christian writers, ripe scholars; and profound thinkers.

The position the Church now occupies, in opposition to true science, is adverse to her best interests, and should cease.

#### THE NORTHWEST CHRISTIAN [SINCE BUTLER] UNIVERSITY.

A charter was obtained from the Legislature, liberal and comprehensive, for this institution, on January 15th, 1850. to be located at Indianapolis, Indiana. It was a joint stock corporation; the shares were one hundred dollars each, on which, when paid up, the stockholder receives six per cent. in tuition. The minimum amount of stock was fixed at \$75,000, and the maximum at \$500,000. There were a number of Commissioners named in the charter, among whom the writer was one. On February 22nd, 1877, the Board of Directors adopted the name "Butler University," in honor to Ovid Butler, one of its founders, who gave largely of his substance, and devoted over twenty years of his life to its interests without pay. In the year 1873, as a result of the encroachment of Indianapolis on the campus, and the allurements of the city on the pupils, a new building was erected at Irvington, a beautiful suburb four miles East of the city, where instruction of the classes began in the Fall of 1875. I do not know the amount of its endowment fund.

Elder John O. Cane, the Agent for soliciting stock, was assisted ten days, by me, in Wabash and Huntington counties, with horse and buggy, and I attended almost every sitting of the Trustees up to May, 1861: then, receiving the appointment of Surgeon in the

Army, I could not attend to its interests longer, and another man was appointed in my place. Two and one-half days were spent on horse-back in going, and as many in coming, and two in the University, making one week spent each trip, cost me in money spent, and time lost from business, over fifty dollars for every trip that was made. It was not regretted then, and is a source of pleasure now. Man should not live for self only! This sentiment is shared, doubtless, by a large per cent. of the stockholders, many of whom have passed to their reward.

One idea peculiar to this Institution, was, that "This should be eminently a Christian Institution, not in any illiberal, or even denominational sense; but should be broad, catholic and philanthropic as Christianity itself." This idea is contained in its organic law. \*

To my children: Butler University is destined to be a great Institution of Learning in the various departments of human knowledge. It is my desire that the interest on my stock shall be used for the benefit of my family and their descendants, male or female; but, if the interest is not used in a reasonable time after due, it shall be given, free of cost, to some worthy person, male or female, who desires an education. My certificate of stock will be left in the hands of my son, Dr. James Henry Ford, to be held in trust for the benefit of my family and their descendants, as stated above.

---

\* For further knowledge of this Institution, see Historical Address, by A. R. Burton, A. M., LL. D.

## AMERICA HOLTON FORD.

(WRITTEN BY HERSELF.)

## MY ANCESTORS.

My great-grandfather, Alexander Holton, was of English parentage, and came to this country at an early period, when an infant only a few months old. His mother died, as tradition gives it, on the voyage across the Ocean, leaving the father with his motherless child to pursue his journey alone to a new and (to them) strange country. On his arrival, providentially however, he found a good christian woman who took the helpless, motherless infant, and cared for him as her own. After seeing his child provided for, and staying in this country a year or two, he concluded to return to his native land; intending, eventually, to return to America and make it his home. This is the last ever heard of him. It was supposed he died there. This is all we know of our family origin, and that is mostly traditional. Thus it will be seen that Alexander Holton, my great-grandfather, was left alone in the world with none to care for him but his foster-mother. This task she performed faithfully, as she reared him to manhood, teaching him, it was said, habits of industry and economy, inculcating sound moral and religious principles, as well.

When he became a man, he married, and became the father of two sons, Willam and Alexander. The first was my grandfather. Of the second I know nothing definite. My grandfather was born in Fauquier county, Virginia, in the year 1739. When he grew up to manhood he was married to <sup>an</sup> Abigail Gorman, my grandmother. Her history and nationality ~~is~~ <sup>are</sup> unknown to me. He and his family resided here until the year 1794, then they em-

igrated to Mason county, Kentucky, taking all their children with them except their oldest daughter, Mildred, who was married, and remained in Virginia. My grandparents had ten children, seven sons and three daughters.

Grandfather settled on lands about one mile South of Minerva, which in time he improved into a beautiful farm. Here he continued to reside until his death, at the advanced age of ninety-two years. He was naturally a man of a peaceable and pleasant disposition: a devout christian, and a member of the Baptist church: a man of influence in the community where he lived and died, leaving an unblemished reputation—a heritage to his posterity. True, he was a slave holder, but was a very kind, humane master, and eventually freed all his slaves: some of them during his lifetime, the others he left free at his death. My grandmother survived him two or three years, and died at the age of eighty-eight. She was a kind-hearted woman. In the early days among the pioneers, when called upon to entertain strangers, she was noted for her hospitality, though involving frequently much labor and sacrifice.

### JESSE HOLTON.

(MY FATHER.)

Jesse Holton, the son of William and Abigail Holton, was born in Fauquier county, Virginia, February 28th, 1781, and came with his parents to their Kentucky home, and assisted in clearing up their land, and all other duties peculiar to farm life. He was educated in the schools of the country, and was versed in all the English branches as taught at that time. His father, although a slave-holder, brought his sons up to habits of industry and economy. As the result of early training, he became a member of the Baptist Church when quite a young man.

He was married to Jane Ireland on the 28th day of July, 1803, who lived with her widowed mother, at this time, near Washington, the county seat of Mason county, Kentucky. He and his wife, the following Fall, moved on land situated one mile South

of Minerva. This land they cleared and brought to a high state of cultivation. Here nine children were born to them, four sons and five daughters. Here they resided until the Spring of 1833, when, becoming disgusted with slavery, an institution which he always believed to be a crime in the sight of God, he sold his farm, thinking he could better his financial condition, then emigrated to Fayette county, Indiana. Here he purchased three hundred and sixty acres of rich land two miles north of Connersville, the county seat. The only slave he owned he brought with him to Indiana, and gave him his freedom.

#### A MINISTER OF THE GOSPEL.

In this brief and imperfect sketch, I must not fail to speak of my father as a Minister of the Gospel. Many years before my recollection, he was an Ordained Minister in the Baptist Church; not of the old regular Calvinistic School, but a more liberal branch of that denomination, who believed in the doctrine taught by Andrew Fuller. He devoted a large portion of his time to preaching and the study of the Word of God; he aimed to make the Scriptures their own expositors. He early discarded the use of "*Creeds*" as bonds of union, and was far in advance of his denomination in his views on that, as well as many other points of doctrine. Thus, when Alexander Campbell, Walter Scott, and others, came out with what was then styled the "*Reformation*," he was fully in accord with their views and gave them his hearty support. Although not an eloquent speaker, in the common acceptance of that term, he was a logical reasoner and presented the truths of the Gospel in a very clear and efficient manner, as was evidenced by the winning of countless numbers of souls to Christ, under his ministration.

As this is not intended as a history of Jesse Holton, but only a brief sketch of his life and character, I must desist.

Looking back from my present standpoint, I think in fact, his zeal, self-sacrifice and devotion to the cause of Christianity, could only be portrayed by the pen of one more gifted than the writer.

It has been said "Some men are too great for monuments." So I think of such men as he, and his co-laborers of that day; men who gave their time and talents without money and without price for the cause of Christ and the conversion of the world. Eternity alone can reveal the good resulting from their labors. After Jesse Holton came to Connersville he turned his attention more to agriculture, only preaching to the church at this town, of which he was chosen an Elder, and his family were among the charter members.

In politics he was a Whig, and took great interest in all questions involving the public welfare. He was intense in his dislike to the institution of slavery.

In the year 1837 he was attacked by that terrible disease, bronchitis, which, in spite of all efforts by skilled physicians, family and friends, grew gradually but surely worse till the fourth day of April, 1839, when he closed his earthly career. "At peace with God and man," and leaving a good name, which "Is better than riches," he leaves as an heritage to his children and the community in which he lived.

#### MOTHER'S ANCESTRY.

Hans Ireland, the father of Jane Ireland, my mother, was born of Scotch parents in Ireland, in the year 1730, and came with them to America when six months old. They settled in Pennsylvania, where he lived till 1789, then emigrated to Kentucky. He was twice married; by his first wife he had two sons and one daughter. Of their history little is known by me. His second wife was my grandmother, who was the widow, Agnes Drummond, the mother of two children by her former husband, one son and one daughter. This marriage occurred about the year 1774-5.

Hans Ireland was a man of nervous temperament, very active, quite tall, had red hair, blue eyes and fair skin. He was frequently engaged with the Indians in the border wars of that pe-

riod, and narrowly escaped death at their hands on more than one occasion: he also served in the War of the Revolution—1776.

He sold his property in Pennsylvania and took pay for it in Continental money, which in a short time became entirely worthless, thus reducing him and his family almost to poverty: but he remained here until 1789. Now, with his family and what means he could command, he moved to Kentucky, which at that time was only a province or county belonging to the State of Virginia. The next year however—1790—it was organized into the Territory of Kentucky, and admitted as a State of the Union in the year 1792. A farm was bought on the road leading from Washington to Murphyville; here, by dint of perseverance and economy, he hewed out a good farm, and was surrounded by as many of the comforts of life as were common among the early settlers. In early life, it was said, he did not adhere to any religious body, but was what might be termed rather a gay, rollicking sort of fellow, full of fun or fight, as occasion required; but in his mature years he united with the Presbyterian church, and remained a consistent member until his death. He was brave and patriotic, having served his country through two wars. He died March 13th, 1802.

Agnes Ireland, my grandmother, whose maiden name was Calender, the daughter of Samuel Calender, was born in Scotland in 1733. She was educated and lived there until married to her first husband, Samuel Drummond, by whom she had a son and a daughter. When they came to America, they settled in Westmoreland county, Pennsylvania. At this place, while engaged in clearing land, he was caught under the limb of a falling tree, and instantly killed. My grandmother had a better opportunity of getting an education than many females of that day. Her family belonged to the better class of Scotch society: she had one brother who was a Surgeon in the British Army in America, during the Colonial period under King George III. After his death a part of his library came into her possession: these books she



studied carefully until she learned the nature, use, and administration of the various agents used in the healing art of that day, and had a knowledge of the science of Obstetrics. Her skill and knowledge were of great use to her and the people where she lived, as physicians were few and hard to obtain on the frontier settlements. She was frequently called upon to treat the sick and afflicted. If she were living now, she would be styled a "Female Physician;" then, only a "very knowing woman and a Midwife." She was a member of the Scotch Presbyterian church, and adhered strictly to its doctrines as long as she lived.

About the year 1774 or 1775<sup>1</sup> she married Hans Ireland. They were the parents of three daughters, namely:

Margaret, born June 11th, 1776, and died in August, 1791.

Nancy, born October 11th, 1779, and died in the year 1854.

Jane was born October 16th, 1781, and died in March, 1859. She was only about eight years old when her parents emigrated to Kentucky.

Agnes Ireland died October 16th, 1803, having lived a long and useful life, full of good works. She also suffered many trials and hardships, incident to life in a new and unimproved country.

## JANE HOLTON.

(MY MOTHER.)

Jesse Holton and Jane Ireland were married July 28th, 1803, in Mason county, Kentucky. They were the parents of nine children:

William Calender, born April 4th, 1805, living.

James Newton, born February 3rd, 1807, died September 3rd, 1866, while on a return trip from California, via Isthmus of Panama, and was buried in the Atlantic Ocean.

Nancy, born February 16th, 1809, died October 6th, 1875, of apoplexy.

Mary Ann, born August 19th, 1810, died October 6th, 1835.

Alexander Cruden, born September 6th, 1812, died May 16th, 1841.

Jesse, born November 6th, 1814, died July 10th, 1866, of consumption, caused by exposure while in the Army.

Elizabeth Jane, born November 25th, 1816, died September 13th, 1836.

America, born March 7th, 1819. Living.

Martha, born April 9th, 1821, died June 27th, 1845.

These children all lived to years of maturity before death invaded that happy family. The first death in our family occurred in October, 1835; since that time all but two have passed away. William C. and myself are the only ones left. A short history of my father has been given, and a history of mother is next in order: yet I can but feel how utterly incompetent I am to do justice to her memory.

Of her girlhood, I know only what I have learned from her and my aunt Key. When her parents emigrated to Kentucky, public affairs were in such an unsettled state, from various causes, that she got but little schooling: but, I think, she got most of her education at home, from her mother. What she lacked in education was more than made up by her good natural abilities. She was the stay and solace of her aged parents, who were both invalids for several years before they died, and looked to her to care for them almost entirely, as their other children were all married and had gone from home. Her father had died a year previous to her marriage: her mother's death occurred two or three months after that event. After this she and my father moved to his land near Minerva, Mason county, Kentucky. Here they labored to make a home for themselves and their children. Their success was due not only to their industry, but in a large degree to my mother's superior qualification as a housekeeper and an economist. She was skilled in all the various arts of that day, such as carding, spinning, weaving, and all other needful <sup>evolutions</sup> ~~avocations~~ for converting the raw material—wool, cotton, flax—into fabrics suitable for

wearing apparel, bed and table linen, and all other household uses, to which we now put the same goods manufactured by machinery.

The beauty and variety of colors and patterns used in manufacturing woolen and cotton were wonderful. She was also an expert with the needle, having learned tailoring when a girl. She could make an overcoat or a suit of clothes equal to any tailor; meanwhile, she often made whole suits for other persons, thus helping to supply the finances, which in the family of a minister laboring without a stated salary, were not always very abundant.

Father, being absent from home so much of the time, threw the training of their children and the management of affairs largely into her hands. She not only carried on her work in the house, but had also to superintend the farm work when father was away. She was a woman of great firmness of character, one who made her influence felt by all with whom she associated; yet kind and gentle with all.

My mother was deeply imbued with the principles of Christianity, and did all in her power to assist my father in his ministration of the Gospel to the people; but was not unmindful of the fact that our temporal needs, as well as our spiritual, must be provided for; hence, if at times she seemed absorbed in worldly cares and "Much serving," it grew out of the necessities of her surroundings. If ever a woman performed her entire duty, as neighbor, wife, mother, or any other obligation resting on her, I think it was my mother. Her posterity, or as many of them as know her history, "Will rise up and call her blessed." She had her share of affliction in the death of her husband and four of her children, who crossed the dark river before her. These trials she endured with christian fortitude, recognizing in all that befell her, the hand of "Him who Doeth all things well." She survived my father almost twenty years, and died in Connersville at the home of Jesse Holton, her youngest son, in March, 1859, in the seventy-eighth year of her age. She was buried in the cemetery by the side of her husband.

## AMERICA HOLTON FORD.

( DAUGHTER OF JESSE AND JANE HOLTON. )

A brief sketch of my ancestors is written above; but when writing something of my own history I feel as if there was very little to record. I was the eighth child of Jane and Jesse Holton, was born on March 7th, 1819, and was raised on our farm in the country, with only my brothers and sisters for companions. Nothing was known of town or city life, except what I learned from visitors, who frequently availed themselves of the hospitality of our pleasant home.

My education was such as could be obtained in the schools of sixty years ago; we had no free schools then, and the facilities for getting an education were very limited, compared with what they are at present; and yet, I think we were more thorough in the rudimentary branches than students of this day. We sometimes had very inferior teachers, but as a general thing we had men who had a good English education; and one is remembered who taught the Latin language, for my oldest brother studied under him at home. We lived near the school house, and usually it fell to my mother's lot to board the teacher; thus giving the family an opportunity to gain many useful ideas, which, otherwise, they might not have gotten. My father being a preacher, attracted to our home many men and women too, of the best minds in the community. At these meetings they discussed theological, and other questions of public and private interest, such as are now relegated almost entirely to the newspapers; thus, in the ~~several~~ districts children and young people gained much information.

In the schools of the country I had mastered the arts of spelling, reading, and writing, and had gone through Kirkham's grammar, partly through geography, and had made a pretty fair start in arithmetic, when thirteen years old. After this I never entered school again. When fourteen years old, father moved to Indiana, (1833) and there were no schools near enough to attend.

without boarding away from home, so my school life ended. I have always regretted that I had not a better education, but no blame is attached to my parents or myself. I have dilligently sought for knowledge by reading and observation. Female education at that period was not considered so essential as it is now; but training in the art of housekeeping was thought to be of the utmost importance. My sisters and I were taught knitting, sewing, spinning of wool, flax and cotton; we all learned to cut and make our own wearing apparel, to make clothes, such as pants, vests, and common coats, for the family; but none of us could equal our mother as a tailoress.

As long as we lived in Kentucky we enjoyed the best of health, and I never remember of a physician being called in our family; but when we came to Indiana, in the Spring of 1833, we settled on one of the farms that father had bought, situated in the White-water River bottom, two miles North of Connersville, a very malarial district. We had lived here but a few months when we were all taken sick, some with chills and fever, others with billious fever, etc., till many times there was not one able to care for another, or to cook a meal's victuals.

In the Fall of 1834, father built a house on a farm he owned one mile West of the river, and moved his family to it. This was a healthier location, but we still had sickness, and several of our hitherto healthy family died from the effects of this poison atmosphere. I never felt so well after this as I had done before. I might not have lived long, either, if I had not married a physician who was ever ready to prescribe. In the mean time I had become acquainted with Dr. James Ford (a young practitioner with fair prospects of success) to whom I was married June 5th. 1837. I was young and inexperienced, only a little over eighteen, but did the best I could to assist him in his efforts to gain a competence.

I desire to remark here (parenthetically) that "In the beautiful long ago," as we are wont to consider it, "The golden past," it

was not thought a woman could do anything more than to keep things in good order in the house, while the men grappled with the sterner and more arduous duties of life. Woman then had not awakened to her possibilities and privileges.—This by the way.

We began our married life with not much of this world's goods, but with a wealth of affection and determination to succeed. My husband had a good practice, and a horse or two. I had a good outfit in the way of bed and bedding, table linen, dishes, etc; a good horse, saddle and bridle, a cow, and many other things not necessary to mention. We bought but little, but what we had was good. We lived within our means, and were just as happy as those who had more: of course we added to our store as we were able.

In March, 1838, our first child, Mary Elizabeth, was born. After this I had poor health for several months, but with careful treatment was finally relieved. In April, 1839, my father died, and was buried at Connersville.

We bade farewell to home and friends, and started for Wabash on the 28th day of January, 1841, to locate in what was then almost a wilderness. This, to me, was a very sad experience, as I had never been separated from mother, brothers and sisters, only for short periods of time. I do not like to recall my feelings at leaving associations held so dear, hence I will not give details. Suffice it to say, after traveling six days over snow and indescribably bad roads, in very cold weather, we landed in Wabash February 4th, 1841.

My brother, A. C. Holton, who was an invalid when we left home, died May 16th following. We felt when we parted that we should never meet again on earth. It is not necessary to speak of our hardships and privations after coming here: they were such as were common in new countries at that time. After father's decease, in 1839, my mother and two brothers, Alexander and Jesse, with sister Martha, remained on the farm until after my

brother A. C. died and Jesse and Martha had married and established homes of their own. This broke up the old homestead; then mother made her home with sister Martha Shipley, till she died, in September, 1845. After this she lived with her other children alternately, at whose homes and firesides she was always a welcome and honored guest. Living so far away, I had not the pleasure of her staying with us, except a visit or two; then, only a few weeks.

In 1843 father's farms were sold, the estate settled up, and the proceeds divided among the seven heirs—a brother and sister having died without issue. How much I received is not remembered; but whatever it was, was judiciously used in paying out our land, and other ways in giving us a start in this wilderness.

My history, if all written, would be similar to that of almost every other woman, who has reared a family. It would be of a life spent in the interest of husband, children, and others who came within her sphere of action. Home and family seemed by providence destined to be my special field of duty. Whatever other influence I exercised, if any, was only a sort of radiation from that center. I think, however, the woman who discharges well her duty to her children and other members of her household, has ample scope for the exercise of all her powers, mental, moral and physical. My husband has given the principal points of interest in his history; he has also spoken of our children, each individually. If I had strength to do it, I would like very much, to add something to each one, but this I cannot undertake, as the subject is one on which I would be pleased to dwell. I might tax my own strength and at the same time, the patience of the reader; it will be seen, however, from my husband's history, that he was at different times, away from home several weeks and sometimes months, thus leaving the care of the family with me. His longest absence from home was during the war; this was a trying time for all of us. When the call was made for volunteers, Dr. Ford just dropped every thing and went

into the service. He had not time to put his business into any kind of shape. His unsettled affairs were left mostly in my hands for adjustment; those who remember the circumstances know about what success I had in this emergency; but to those who know nothing of the trials and hardships incident to this situation, these details would be uninteresting. Neither have I the strength or inclination to give them. Suffice it to say, our business affairs were in quite as good, if not in better shape, when he returned, than they were when he left all so unceremoniously to "Go at his country's call." I will just remark here that it was with my cordial consent and approbation that he went into the service. I was willing to make any sacrifice in my power for the preservation of the Union. This was the feeling of all loyal women, and on them depended largely the success of our cause.

AUGUST 16, 1889.

After a period of time extending over several months, in which I have been physically unable to write much, I will try to finish up the small amount of matter I have to contribute to the history of the Ford Family.

My failing strength, and inability to endure mental labor, admonish me that I must be very brief.

As I have said before, my life has been an uneventful one, consisting mainly of duties performed to my family and in the circle of society in which we moved. I have always tried to do my part in Church and Missionary work. I was one of the charter members of the Christian Women's Bible Missionary Society of this city, organized in the year 1872 or 1873. I forget which; and always attended its meetings until old age and debility prevented me from doing so.

I united with the Christian church at Connersville, Fayette county, Indiana, when in my fifteenth year, and was immersed by Elder John O. Kane, at a meeting held by him, Walter Scott, and other prominent preachers. I mean no disparagement to Minis-



ters of the present, when I say, "There were Giants in those days;" but these pioneer preachers, as a class, with their powerful presentation of the Gospel Truths, and their fervid, ringing eloquence, have almost entirely passed away; but they have been succeeded by men better suited to this age, and just as good, and true, as they were: so, thank God, the preaching of the Word and the conversion of the world still goes on.

I wish to state, and may as well do it now, that I have always held firmly to the belief in God as the Creator of all things in the "beginning," as taught in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments, and that He sent His Son, Jesus Christ, to die for the redemption of mankind, when, by disobedience they had wandered far away from Him. I have never doubted the New Testament account of the birth, life, death, and resurrection of Christ, and that through Him we have hope of life and immortality beyond the grave. If it were not for this hope, life at times with its trials and disappointments, would indeed seem a dreary pilgrimage; but with this to cheer us, we may press forward, happy in the service of the Master, and doing good to all as we find opportunity, assured that we shall at last receive our reward — "A crown of glory." I make this record for the benefit of my children, or any one else with whom I may have any influence.

[ For the balance of my history, see Appendix B. ]

AMERICA HOLTON FORD.

## MARY ELIZABETH FORD [THOMPSON.]

(OLDEST CHILD OF AMERICA AND DR. JAMES FORD.)

Mary Elizabeth was born in Connersville, Indiana, March 15th, 1838, and died February 22nd, 1865.

When this child was six years old, she had a terrible attack of acute rheumatism, confined principally to her knees; this was preceded by a severe attack of scarlet fever. The rheumatism continued for six weeks without intermission. When she recovered from this, though seemingly well, she was not as vigorous as I desired. Years after this, she was given more open air exercise, more sunshine, and was taught to work in the garden and to saw wood with a buck-saw. This was done for health, not for dollars. This exercise expands the chest, strengthens all the muscles concerned in respiration: the muscles of the back: the muscles of the legs and feet, and, especially, the muscles of the arms. This regimen was followed a few weeks, when she declared that she would rather work in the open field, in hot weather, than to be confined in school. She never had another attack of rheumatism. The corset was laid aside—or rather never adopted; her body developed in a symmetrical form, as nature designed it. Thus she grew into womanhood with a sound body and mind. Her education was such as was taught in the High School of that day. She studied music at home, and took instruction on the piano in Chicago, Illinois.

She took great interest as a teacher in Sunday school, and Temperance work; was a member of the organization of Good Templars of Wabash county; was sent as a Delegate to the Grand Lodge at Indianapolis, and at this meeting was elected "Grand Worthy Sister Presiding of the State."

Mary became a member of the Christian church in 1852, and held an honorable position in it until her death.

Mary Elizabeth Ford was married to Joseph Moran Thompson, October 5th, 1858. Mr. Thompson was a merchant, and at that time doing business in Wabash.

The following children came from this marriage:

Moses Hartwell, born November 6th, 1859, died August 27th, 1860.

Harriet May, born February 2nd, 1861.

America Holton, born January 21st, 1863.

Mary Ford, born February 13th, 1865, died June 15th, 1882. She was well educated, and a very sensible young lady.

When the War of 1861 began, Joseph M. Thompson was First Lieutenant in the Eighth Regiment of Indiana Volunteer Infantry in the ninety days service; then he was mustered as Captain of Company I in the same Regiment, for the three years service. Mary E. Thompson was now taken to her father's home and kept there over two years, until her third child was born: then, in the Fall of 1863, she moved into their own house, and had a lonesome time of it. One trait of character she possessed in an eminent degree: She ever looked on the bright side of all subjects: was always happy and cheerful, and had ability to make her friends feel so too.

Her youngest daughter was born on the 13th day of February, 1865. Nothing unusual occurred in this case of parturition. On the third day after her confinement, she had a severe chill, followed by high fever and peritoneal inflammation, which yielded to treatment. In four or five days she was thought to be out of danger; but, while sleeping, uterine hemorrhage commenced, and continued until she awoke. She was not aware of her condition herself, but was faint and exhausted. The hemorrhage was quickly stopped, cordials and stimulants were administered, but her pulse showed that her heart was failing. Presently she said:

“Pa, I can’t see!”

I knew the end had come, and said to her—"Mary, you are dying." She replied—

"Pa, I am not afraid to die."

She now informed her mother what disposition she wished to make of her children and of her affairs.

*Calm and unexcited, without a struggle, without the movement of a muscle, she closed her eyes and ceased to be.*

This death was so sudden, so unexpected, so sad, I broke down—overwhelmed with sorrow. My wife, too, "Had passed under the chastening rod." We were "Poured out like water."

Lieutenant-Colonel Thompson, her husband, was in Savannah, Georgia, in command of the Eighth Regiment of Indiana Infantry, and knew nothing of this sad event. He was also Provost Advocate for the Southern District of Georgia, and could not leave. His surprise and sorrow cannot be described. As soon as his condition was known at Headquarters, another man was sent to take his place, and he reached home in April, 1865.

Mary E. Thompson was buried on lot No. 489, in Falls Avenue Cemetery.

The following obituary notice was published in the Tribune:

#### OBITUARY.

"Mary E. Thompson, wife of Captain J. M. Thompson, closed her earthly pilgrimage on Tuesday, the 22nd day of February, 1865. She left three infant daughters, one nine days old, a husband, and a large circle of friends to mourn her loss.

"Sister T. was born in Connersville, Ind., in 1838, and was brought to Wabash, Ind., in the arms of her parents in 1841. Here she grew up and was educated. At an early period her influence was felt in the Sunday school and temperance cause.

"She obeyed the Gospel when thirteen years old; her increasing years strengthened her faith; death was not a terror to her. The Bible had been her chief study. In her last moments she exhorted her friends to 'Study the Bible.' A short time before

expiring, her father, Dr. J. Ford, said to her, 'Mary, you are dying;' without any emotion, she calmly replied, '*I am not afraid to die.*' With an abiding confidence of a happy admittance into the upper sanctuary, she passed away.

Sweet is the scene when Christians die,  
When holy souls retire to rest;  
How mildly beams the closing eye;  
How gently heaves the expiring breast.

So fades a summer cloud away;  
So sinks the gale when storms are o'er,  
So gently shuts the eye of day;  
So dies the wave along the shore.

Christ was her example; His word her study; His people her associates; His house her resort; and His worship her delight. She exchanged faith for sight; hope for fruition; sorrow for joy; time for eternity; earth for heaven; the church below for the spiritual church above:—she lives with the Lord.

"A funeral discourse was delivered by Elder A. I. Hobbs, in the 2nd Presbyterian church, from these words:

" 'For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands eternal in the heavens,'—2nd Cor., v. 1.

"A great concourse of people attended the funeral; and judging from the sympathy manifested, it was evident that one had fallen who was highly esteemed and respected by all.

"Like a clap of thunder in a clear sky this sad news will strike Captain Thompson, who is now in Savannah, Georgia, and probably little suspects the loss of his dear companion at home; but this '*Cruel War*' has separated thousands who will never meet again on the shores of time."

WM. S. WINFIELD.

## JOSEPH M. THOMPSON.

Joseph M. Thompson was born in Rush county, Indiana, May 15th, 1828, and was raised on a farm. "My father died," he states, "In the year 1833." In this year his mother returned to Kentucky, and continued there until 1842, when she married again; then she moved to Wabash county, and settled North of LaGro in the Spring of 1846. "My mother died here," he said. "Then I went to Crawfordsville and lived with my brother Noah until the year 1847. After this I went to Kentucky to visit my relatives. While here, in the Summer of this year, I enlisted in the United States Army, in the War with Mexico, and remained in the service until peace was declared; and then returned, in July, 1848. I joined the Third Regiment of Kentucky Volunteers, commanded by Colonel Manuel V. Thompson; Lieutenant-Colonel John Crittenden's son; Major, John C. Breckenridge.

"After this War I returned to Crawfordsville, my home, and remained until January, 1852; then I went by water to California and remained until the Spring of 1853, working in the gold mines. Then I sailed for Australia, and operated in the gold fields of that country until 1854. From there I sailed to Caleo, South America, intending to travel across the country to the head waters of the Amazon, in search of gold, but was taken sick at the City of Lima, with yellow fever. When I recovered from this attack, I was unable to continue on this route; and as health would permit I traveled up the coast to Panama, thence to California again in the Spring of 1855, and operated here in the gold mines until the year 1856, and reached home the day before the Presidential election—1856.

"I had now been absent five years, less two months.

"I made my home at Crawfordsville until the spring of 1857, then came to Wabash and engaged in the mercantile business, in company with Albert Pawling, and continued until 1860. The balance of this year I spent settling up our affairs. Meantime, I

was married to Miss Mary Elizabeth Ford, daughter of America and Dr. James Ford, October 5th, 1858, all of Wabash, Indiana.

"In the year 1861 I volunteered under the first call for 75,000 ninety-day men, made by President Lincoln. This service expired July 24th. Then I re-enlisted for three years, or during the war.

"I held five Commissions from Governor O. P. Morton, viz.: First Lieutenant, twice Captain, once Major, and once Lieutenant-Colonel.

"I was in the following battles, viz.: Rich Mountain, West Virginia. In the three years service;—Pea Ridge, Arkansas; Vicksburg, Champion Hill, Black River, and Grand Gulf, all in Mississippi; Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek, in Virginia; and Fort Esperanza, in Texas;—ten battles.

"From West Virginia we were sent to Georgia. At Augusta I held Alexander H. Stevison, Vice President of the Southern Confederacy, for about fourteen hours, and put him aboard the steam ship that took him to Fortress Monroe.

"We were mustered out of service at Darian, Georgia, August, 1865, and reached Indianapolis on our return home, in September, 1865.

"I never was wounded but once; that was by the blowing up of Fort Esperanza, in Texas. I was struck on the hip by a piece of hewed timber, but no bones were broken.

"After the close of the War, in the Fall of 1865, I went into manufacturing of woolen goods, and general merchandising, in the firm of Whiteside, McClees & Co. We continued in the business until the year 1874, when this Company failed, and the goods and other property were put into the hands of a Receiver. This failure was caused in part by the Chicago fire, and the depreciation of values. The factory cost \$35,000, and was sold for \$7,000, and other property in proportion."

In the year 1878 Mr. Thompson engaged in the Postal Service, under the United States Government, and continued until December 28th, 1886. He said—

"I was discharged this day to give place to a Democrat, who knows nothing about the business. No charges were preferred."

Mr. Thompson is in declining health; is not in any business at this date— April 30th, 1888.

He draws a pension, and is in comfortable circumstances.

The above notes are as he gave them to me, and almost in his own words.

Mr. Thompson is an active member of the Christian church; a respected citizen, and enjoys the confidence and respect of all the people.

The children of Mary and J. M. Thompson are—

### HARRIET MAY THOMPSON.

Harriet May, mentioned above, was raised and educated by her relatives. She is a member of the Christian church, and a fine Sunday school teacher. She is industrious, a good house-keeper, and a kindly disposed woman.

She married Melville Herschell Marshall, on the first day of September, 1886. On the day of her marriage she got a deed for forty acres of land from her grandfather, Dr. J. Ford, as a marriage present, worth \$1,000. Mr. Marshall is a painter by trade, and an elegant workman; is industrious, and has the confidence of the people.

### AMERICA THOMPSON.

America, J. M. Thompson's second daughter, reared in her father's family, received a high school education, and was married to Daniel Baker, of Plattsville, Colorado, in 1884. She received, also, a deed for forty acres of land from Dr. J. Ford, on which she and her husband reside, worth \$1,000. This land is situate in



Section 28, Town 24 North, Range 11 East, in Blackford county, Indiana.

America is the mother of the following children, viz.:

Hazel, born December 13th, 1884.

Homer Vern, born July 1st, 1886.

Both these children were born at Plattsville, Colorado.

Ray, Born December 1st, 1888, on their farm in Blackford county, Indiana.

Mr. Baker is a man of intelligence, but is a stranger to me.

### MARTHA JANE FORD.

Martha Jane, second daughter of James and America Ford, was born July 1st, 1841, and died January 18th, 1846, of congestion of the lungs, as the sequel to measles; aged 5 years, 4 months and 17 days.

### ALLENA FORD [WILLIAMS.]

Allena Ford, third daughter of America and James Ford, was born on the 6th day of August, 1843. She was educated in the schools of the city, in the various branches of learning as then taught. Then she entered the High School under the administration of E. P. Cole; here she read Cæsar's Commentary in Latin, and Xenophon's Anabasis in Greek; finished her Arithmetic, and had nearly finished Algebra. In the year 1862 she entered the Northwestern Christian University, now Butler; here she finished Cæsar, reviewed Xenophon's Anabasis, and completed Algebra; read two books of Virgil, finished Geometry, and got nearly through Trigonometry and Gray's Botany, when the year ended.

She taught one year in the High School in Wabash, probably in the year 1863, and two winter terms in the country. The last

school she taught terminated February 29th, 1865, at the time of her sister Mary's death.

Allena became a member of the Christian church at Indianapolis, during school term, and has remained an active member ever since.

At this time she was in her twenty-second year, and was married to Benjamin Franklin Williams, Esq., of Wabash, Indiana, on the 8th day of May, 1866. On their wedding trip they visited Pittsburg, Philadelphia, New York City, and the Falls of Niagara.

The progeny of this marriage is as follows, viz.:

Frank Ford, born on Tuesday, October 12th, 1869, at 3:00 p. m.

Jesse Benton, born on Sunday at 7:00 p. m., January 7th, 1871.

Anna Holton, born on Sunday at 9:00 p. m., February 4th, 1877. Now in school.

John Sherman, born on Sunday, April 6th, 1879, at 9:00 p. m. Now in school.

James, born on Sunday at 10:00 p. m., August 14th, 1881.

Allena, born on Sunday at 11:00 p. m., December 31st, 1883.

All these are healthy, bright, sprightly children; and with proper training will make useful subjects of the State, and the society in which they live. Mrs. Williams' education is of great use to her family; she is able and willing to direct and assist her children in all their studies, and to create in them a taste for the beautiful in art and nature.

“ ‘Tis education that forms the infant mind;  
Just as the twig is bent the tree's inclined.”

Education, once obtained, can never be taken away; and, “As we can only reason from what we know,” it is strange that so many people are content to remain in ignorance; since—

Our needful knowledge, like our needful food,  
Unhedged, lies open in life's common field;  
And bids all welcome to the vital feast.

“Knowledge is power:” it is the foundation principle on which our Government rests. Hence, the necessity of educating

the rising generation to fill every needed duty intelligently. With our free schools, both parents are morally, and should be legally, bound to educate their children; the responsibility rests on them. The State demands it; their sense of propriety—if they have any—demands it; and the life-long interest of the children demands it.

Cursed be the hand that would destroy our free schools!

Frank Ford Williams, their oldest son, near twenty years of age, is a graduate of the Wabash High School, and is now in the Freshman class in Butler University, Indianapolis, Indiana.

Jesse Benton Williams, their second son, is now in the High School, and will graduate this year.

All the children of this family are in school.

### CAPT. B. F. WILLIAMS.

This gentleman has been a resident of Wabash county and City since 1836, whither he moved with his parents from Fayette county, Indiana, where he was born September 29th, 1830. His paternal grandfather was a Virginian, and emigrated to Bourbon county, Ky., where John S. Williams, the father of Benjamin F. Williams was born and reared. He came to Indiana very early in the State's history. Capt. Williams was reared in Liberty township, Wabash county, and educated in its schools, except a year spent in Fairview Academy, Fayette county, and one year in Butler University. He worked on the farm till he was of age; after that time he interspersed farming with teaching till 1857, when he entered the law office of J. D. Conner as a student. In 1859 he graduated at the head of the law class in Butler University, under the Hons. J. W. Gordon and S. E. Perkins. After graduating, he practiced in Wabash until April, 1861, when he enlisted in the first Company of soldiers raised in Wabash. This Company composed a part of the Eighth Regiment Indiana Volunteers,

and was under the command of Captain (later General) Parish, and was enlisted for three months. Capt. Williams first saw service at Rich Mountain, W. Va. After the expiration of his general term of service, he returned to Wabash and resumed the practice of his profession, which he continued until in August, 1862, when he raised Company F, of the One Hundred and First Regiment, Indiana Volunteers, of which company he became the Captain. He remained in the service in this position until the close of the war."

He saw service at Chaplin Hills, Crab Orchard and in Garrison at Mumfordsville. He was in Reynolds' division in its pursuit of Morgan to Green River, Kentucky; then he moved to Murfreesboro after the battle of Stone River. He was in action at Hoover's Gap, and at Tullahoma and again at Chickamauga, under Thomas, in the corps, whose firmness in the last terrible day of battle perhaps saved the army of the Cumberland, from annihilation. He was at Chattanooga during the siege, when they seemed to be cut off from all chances of succor, and the rebels confidently expected the surrender of the entire army. He endured all the privations that befell the soldier, until Gen. Grant brought relief. He spent the winter following on out-post duty, with his headquarters at Rossville, Ga., until March 15th, 1864; thence to the battle of Jonesboro, Ga. His history is a part of the history of the Atlanta campaign.

After the siege of Atlanta, he was with Sherman on his "march to the sea." During that march, the soldiers' hardships seemed all over, and it all was but a long gala day. But after the taking of Savannah, on the march North, they seemed to return with severity enhanced by their previous inhumanity. The streams were swollen, the roads were bad, provisions scarce and an alert enemy in front. After they got beyond Goldsboro, N. C., they were again confronted by their old enemy, Joseph E. Johnson, at Bentonville, and found that he could still hit hard when the occasion suited him.

After Johnson's surrender, Captain Williams continued with the army on its northward march through Richmond. From Richmond he went to Washington, where he was a participant in the grand review. He returned home on July 4th, 1865, and resumed the practice of his profession.

On the 8th day of May, 1866, he married Miss Allena Ford, daughter of Dr. James Ford, of Wabash, Indiana. Captain Williams is a member of the Christian church, and of the Republican party, and thinks it not derogatory to either or to himself to connect the one closely to the other, and himself with both. He is a man of enterprise and useful to the community of which he is a member.

This history is taken from the Wabash County History, page 263.

Mr. Williams is still pursuing the even tenor of his way—[September 1st, 1888].

### NANCY ANNA FORD [STONE].

Nancy Anna Ford, daughter of America and James Ford, was born at Wabash, Indiana, February 12th, 1846.

Here is a part of a letter she wrote, dated at Topeka, Kansas, March 16th, 1887:

“MY DEAR FATHER:

“Stella and Robert came to see me last Saturday, and said, Henry [Ford] told them to write a history of their lives, for you to put in your book; and to encourage them, I told them I'd write my history too, and send it with them to you.

#### HISTORY OF MY LIFE.

“I was born in Wabash, Indiana, at an early day, in the year 1846, where I resided until I married, May 19th, 1868. For the first fifteen years, I was not out of the county, but lived a happy life in my home with brothers and sisters, attending the schools

taught by private teachers, until about the age of twelve, when the union school building was completed. I continued my studies in this house until the eighteenth year of my life, until sister Mary died [February 22nd, 1865]; then I remained at home to help care for her little ones until the following year.

“I went to the Academy of Music at Friendship, New York, and spent one year in that pleasant study. After my return I remained with my parents till the year 1868, when I married William Daily Stone. We began our married life in Gilman, Iroquois county, Illinois, where my husband engaged in the sale of dry goods for many years.”

[Before this, however, Nancy A. Ford had qualified herself to teach school. After she passed the necessary examination she was employed as a teacher at LaFontaine (Ashland) and taught her term half out, when she was prostrated by an attack of fever, and never finished it. She became a member of the Christian church, and was immersed in the Winter of 1864-5.—*The Author.*]

“At Gilman,” she says, “We had three children born to us, namely:

“Sherman Holton, born July 2nd, 1870, and was drowned in a cistern on April 1st, 1873.

“Mary Stella, born November 26th, 1872.

“Robert Raymond, born March 26th, 1877.

“We made our home in Gilman until my husband’s health, as well as mine, failed; then we moved to the State of Kansas, where Mr. Stone engaged in the agricultural implement business in the Capital of the State, till the year 1884. Then, after a time, he engaged in the construction of railroads for the various companies of the State.

“My health failed so frequently that my mind became affected. I entered the Hospital for the Insane, situated near Topeka, where I remained for some time without receiving any benefit, but have lost immeasurably.”

ANNA STONE.

This letter is given as she wrote it, and is correct in every particular.

Her brain and nervous symptoms developed in advance of her muscular and osseous symptoms. She never was as strong and vigorous as our other children; but, mentally, comprehensive and bright. She had a taste for Art and Music, which was gratified in her education.

Her home at Gilman was in a prairie; this location was low, flat, wet and unhealthy, and her health failed in this village. She came home, probably, in the year 1878; I treated her for some time, and found the ovaries large and tender. How long they had been diseased, I do not know, but it was evident that she could not regain health until this inflammation [ovaritis] was removed. In November, 1879, she became very insane, and had spasms for a short time; but recovered and was able to manage her domestic affairs, with an occasional short attack, up to the Spring of 1883. Then she was placed in the Insane Asylum until April 5th, 1887; then she was taken to Chicago, and both ovaries [tumors] were removed by the skilful hand of Dr. Byford. She recovered without accident, and returned to her parents' home in the following May.

She did not seem much improved for some time after the operation; but at this writing, May 30th, 1888, she is very much improved, with a fair prospect of her entire recovery. This history is given, to show that her aberrant mind arose from the disease mentioned above, and *not from hereditary taint!*

We have of late received many good long letters from her, and no one would suspect insanity, by the language used. Her ideas are clear, and well expressed. A stream never rises higher than its source; so here, every cell has been formed in her system under diseased action, under mental excitement, and is in a diseased, pathological condition. Although the exciting cause of the disease has been removed, yet the insane-habit, diathesis, still remains, and will, until the morbid cells are replaced by

healthy, until nature or the vital forces rebuild the various tissues with sound material. This work will require two or more years to accomplish it; but, unless some other cause intervenes, it will pretty surely take place.

After she married and went to her own home, a sweet voice was heard no more; the piano was silent, a gloom spread through the halls that was never felt before; a last daughter had left the parental roof, possibly never to return again. This was a sad thought! When our children interest us most, they leave us and bestow heaven's best gift on some one else; but we should not complain, for we did the same thing. We thought if she and her husband were happy, we would be so too! We boxed up the piano and all her music, and sent it to her, as a Christmas gift. It was a blessing to her, and no less to us.

“Thus our daughters leave us,  
Those we love and those that love us;  
But when they have learned to help us,  
When we are old and lean upon them,  
Comes a stranger \* \* \*  
\* \* \* Through the village,  
Beckons to the fairest maiden.  
And she follows where he leads her,  
Leaving all things for the stranger.”

—*Longfellow.*

## W. D. STONE.

William Daily Stone was born January 12th, 1843, at Fayetteville, Fayette county, Indiana.

His mother's maiden name was Ellen Daily, and his father's name was Spencer Allen Stone.

W. D. Stone was raised on a farm up to the death of his father, which occurred March 15th, 1854. His mother died on the 4th day of August following, leaving him without a home.



In the Fall of 1854 he came to Wabash county, Indiana, and lived with his uncle John L. Stone, until 1859, where he attended school about two months each year—eight months in all.

“During the year 1860,” he says, “I attended school at Kokomo, Indiana, for six months; after this I commenced learning the carpenter’s trade, until the War broke out, in 1861; then I enlisted in the Second Cavalry, Company F, Captain Mason I. Thomas, at Wabash, Indiana, for the three years service.

“We marched, via. Louisville, Kentucky, on the 1st day of June, 1862, to Green River, near Mumfordsville, and camped. After Fort Donelson and Henry had fallen, we marched to Nashville, Tennessee, thence to Pittsburg Landing. After the battle here, April 6th and 7th, we marched to Corinth, Mississippi. Here my services ended with this Regiment. I was now put on extra duty as Body Guard on General A. McCook’s Staff, until after the battle of Chickamauga, September 22nd, 1863.

#### WAR RECORD.

“At the battle of Stone River my horse was killed in the first day’s fight, but I escaped without injury. Our supply train and baggage, including everything belonging to General McCook’s Headquarters, was captured and burned; so at the close of the first day of hard fighting, and raining, as it always does after a hard battle, Generals Rosecrans and McCook accepted a cup of coffee with hardtack and sow-belly, furnished by the ‘Escort’s pack mule,’ of which W. D. Stone was Captain, that escaped with our colored cook from Wheeler’s Cavalry. After this great battle we all felt that we were old soldiers indeed. The remainder of the Winter was spent at Murfreesboro.

“While here, my Command conducted Old Vandalia from our Headquarters safely into the Enemy’s lines, where the Copperhead was among his friends.

“Our Army advanced to Chattanooga, causing Bragg to fall back, evacuating Chattanooga and bringing on the great battle of Chickamauga. In this battle, our General and General Rosecrans,

with Escort and Staff, witnessed the charge of Longstreet's troops, and the breaking of our lines, which, at one time, were almost stampeded. Both Generals got separated from their Commands, and were not seen any more during the battle. General Thomas finished the battle, with great credit to himself and Army. The Escort and Chief of Staff fell in with Sheridan's Division. While taking an order to General Johnson, commanding the Second Division of our Corps, my horse was killed; but I succeeded in re-mounting myself on a horse belonging to the Staff.

••Generals Rosecrans and McCook were relieved of their commands, and General Sheridan commanded. Our department, numbering twenty-two, myself in command, was ordered to Sherman's Escort. Soon after this, our detachment returned to the Regiment. While remaining in Pigeon River Valley, I had my first attack of sickness, pneumonia. I had no tent, but laid on a brush bed, using my saddle for a pillow, in mid-Winter; but, with the best of care by comrades and skilful physicians, I was able to ride on horseback in February.

••At Cleveland, Tennessee, I was again put in charge of the Office end of the courier line, between Chattanooga and Cleveland. Most of the time the number of men in this service was over 100. Our business was to keep communication with the Army whenever the telegraph office might be blockaded. I looked after the supplies, and receipting for all messages and packages that came into my hands for delivery to General Sheridan. We performed this duty successfully, though attended with much danger at times. We had several horses killed and wounded under the couriers, by bush-whackers.

••Our time having expired, we left the army in front of Chattanooga, Georgia, after serving three years, and were mustered out of service in October 1864.

••I will state in conclusion, that with the exception of an attack of pneumonia, I never lost a day during my three years service;

never rode in an ambulance; never was in the hospital; was never placed under arrest during the time. I was in command of the Escort and mounted Orderlies. In time of battle, was interested in carrying oral messages to Division Commanders, the same as Staff officers. I performed Courier duty for General Sherman's Army, and handled thousands of important orders, receipted for them and never failed to have them delivered unless the Courier was captured, then the message was destroyed before it fell into the hands of the enemy. All important telegrams from Washington to General Sherman passed through my hands.

"I was never wounded, but the sickness and exposure during the entire campaign in East Tennessee, left a lasting effect that will go with me to the end of my life."

"After I came out of the army, I took a course of instruction in a Commercial College at Indianapolis, Indiana. I was now twenty-one years old, and entered the store of Daniel Sayre as salesman, and continued here until March 1867. After this experience, I commenced the dry goods business in March 1867 at Gilman, Iroquois county, Illinois, which proved successful. I had formed a co-partnership with my brother Charles C. Stone, and continued in business ten years, 1878.

"I married Miss Nancy Anna Ford, at Wabash, Indiana, May 19th, 1868.

"I sold my interest in the store to my brother in the fall of 1878; this year I moved to Topeka, Kansas, and formed a co-partnership with L. W. Kenedy, in a wholesale and retail trade of farm machinery, and continued in this business six years, but before closing out, we engaged in the railroad construction; this enterprise being profitable we have continued up to the present time. Our outfit consisting of horses, excavators, scrapers etc, cost about \$12,000. With this outfit, we were able to construct one mile of rail road bed per day, through a tolerably level country."

Mary Stella Stone, only daughter of Nancy A. and Wm. D. Stone, is now an intelligent young lady, and will graduate in the high school of Topeka, Kansas this fall—1889.

Robert R. Stone is a bright boy and is now in school at Topeka. Date of births given on page 154.

### JAMES HENRY FORD.

James H. Ford, son of James Ford, son of James Ford senior, was born in Wabash, Indiana, October, 30, 1848; was a vigorous and healthy child when thirteen months old. About four o'clock p. m., he was seized with a fit of an epileptic character; the immediate cause of this spasm was congestion of the brain, but the remote cause was probably, indigestion. The convulsions despite of all my efforts to relieve him, continued about sixteen hours. Another physician, Dr. J. R. Cox was called; he thought the child would "inevitably die, as the congestion of the brain could not be relieved." I tried to bleed him from the arm, but failed to find a vein. Foiled in every effort, I stood an idle spectator, waiting the death of my only son; minutes were hours. But from some psychological source, came the command, "open an artery." Immediately the temporal artery was divided, and four ounces of blood abstracted, and his cold body was rubbed with hot turpentine. The venesections unloaded the brain; the hot oil and massage brought the blood back to the surface and established an equilibrium of the circulation, thus enabling the vital forces to resume their usual healthy (physiological) action. The child recovered. Of late years the use of the lancet is almost ignored. Thousands of deaths annually occur, that in my judgment, could be avoided by the use of vena section.

When of proper age, he was sent to school, and continued his studies from year to year until the spring of 1864, when he enlisted in the Fourteenth Indiana Battery. He was now fifteen.

years old, and too young for Battery service, but with a number of his neighbor boys, left home without their parents' consent and joined Captain Meridith Kidd's company that rendezvoused at Indianapolis, Indiana.

The writer had seen many such young soldiers drop out of rank, and lay down by the road-side, and never reach their command again; they either died of disease or were killed. Their patriotism was admirable, but not their judgment. On the presentation of these facts to the authorities, he was ordered out of rank, and came home and entered school again.

He finished his education in the high school, and was a fair English scholar, and had some knowledge of Latin.

Now, after a trip to Kentucky, and Cincinnati, visiting relatives, he desired to study the science of medicine. I was opposed to this on the ground that it was an arduous profession, and not very profitable. He had assisted me in performing a number of surgical operations, and was greatly enamored with surgery.

He was told that if he read medicine, he must make thorough work of it: that a quack, tampering with human life, was a detestable creature; at the foot, there was an immense professional throng, and at the top of the ladder, *few*. After putting in three years study and two full courses of medical lectures, one at Ann Arbor, he graduated M. D. in the medical department of Butler University, March, 1872.

#### HIS ADVENT IN BUSINESS.

He had graduated and desired to engage in the practice of medicine with me in the city of Wabash. I had some doubts about his success in getting practice; but he said: "I was born here, I was raised and educated here, and here I want to live." I then replied, I can carry you one year, then we will see what you can do.

MEMORANDUM: This day, March 25th, 1872, James Ford and James H. Ford (my son) go into copartnership in the practice of medicine and surgery on the following arrangement, viz.:

James H. Ford is to have one fourth of the entire proceeds of the practice of himself and of James Ford, his father. This partnership to continue until altered or closed up entirely by the request of either party.' Signed,

JAMES FORD.

JAMES H. FORD.

This year, 1872, we had many scattering cases of brain fever, (Cerebro spinal meningitis) which proved very fatal in the hands of all the physicians; it was something new to them; the "literature" on this subject was not extensive or reliable. I had some experience with it at Connersville, Indiana, in 1835. Many of these were treated by my son; neither he nor I lost a case of it, but some came out with impaired vision, loss of hearing, or paralysis of some portion of the body; yet they all recovered within one year, except a small boy who was left with a club-foot, (talipes.) Dr. Henry Ford cut the heel cord, tendo-achilles, which brought the foot fairly on the ground; he could walk, but was lame by reason of paralysis in the muscles of the leg.

This success, together with his industry, brought him up before the people as a physician and surgeon.

This copartnership continued until January 1st, 1880, but not as started, for he was soon made equal partner and shared half of the profits. He has continued in this business ever since on his own responsibility.

On the third day of November, 1875, he married Lois D McClain, daughter of Mary I. and Honorable Nelson M. McClain, of Wabash, Indiana. The newly married couple moved to their own property, which had been handsomely furnished before by the bride. They lived here happily until the thirty-first day of December, 1878, when their house took fire in the upper story, and burned up, destroying everything they had. This sad accident threw them out of a home until another house could be built, which was done soon after. The new structure was built in cottage style and is an elegant frame building, nicely furnished

and supplied with water and a heating furnace in the basement, the fuel being natural gas.

Their first and only child, Helen, was born February 12, 1884. She has an elegant physical form and is a very sprightly child.

He delivered two full courses of Lectures in the Medical College at Fort Wayne, on physiology, in the years 1876 and 1879. The faculty desired him to continue, but his business would not admit of it, unless he moved to Fort Wayne; this he would not do.

J. H. Ford is now surgeon in chief on the Cincinnati, Wabash & Michigan railroad, and surgeon on the Wabash, St. Louis and Great Western railroad. He is in comfortable circumstances and has a profitable practice.

#### WILLIAM JESSE FORD.

William Jesse Ford, son of Dr. James Ford, son of James Ford, senior, son of Henry Ford, was born in Wabash, Indiana, March 6th, 1851, and was named after his two uncles Jesse Holton and William J. Ford. Before he was two years old, he had an attack of measles, which affected his lungs and continued several years with a troublesome cough, inflamed eyes and general debility.

His mother says of him, "This long protracted sickness, impaired his vitality to some extent: thus, physically, he was not as vigorous as some of the other children, and not being able to bear the confinement of the school room, he did not get as good an education as did some of the other members of the family; however, he got a good common school and business education. He had a talent for mathematics. After he reached his majority he took a position as salesman in W. D. Stone's store at Gilman, Illinois. Here he continued until the Spring of 1874, when he went to San Francisco, California. He had learned house and carriage painting before he left home. This business he expected to follow until he could obtain something better. He succeeded in getting employment at good wages, and was doing well, but

from change of climate or some other cause, he got sick and was unable to work for some time. Having exhausted his means and being among strangers, he telegraphed home for funds. I sent a postal order to him for one hundred dollars which enabled him to come home again. The experience he gained on this trip, though adverse, was of much use to him afterwards.

Jesse was married December 31st, 1874 to Miss Mary Jane Conda, an amiable, sprightly, industrious young lady, who has made him a very excellent wife; she is an exceptionally good house keeper; is a member of the Christian church, and all together a very worthy woman. Her parents having died when she was but a child, she was raised by her grand parents, Payton Daniels and wife, who were originally from Kentucky, but came to Indiana at an early day; they were among the first settlers of Wabash county; were well-to-do farmers and possessed a considerable amount of wealth at their deaths.

In politics, Jesse is a Republican; socially, is kind and agreeable—ready always to grant a favor to a friend or neighbor when in need. He is a pleasant, genial, companion, having a “spice” of wit and humor, in his conversation which at times is almost irresistible.

The following children have been born to this couple:

Jesse Ford junior, born February 9th, 1876, and died February 19th, 1876.

Edwin Conda, born October 20th, 1877.

Nellie Holton, born April 29th, 1880.

Ethel America, born November 15th, 1882.

Anna Elizabeth, born August 8th, 1884.

James Oscar, born March 14th, 1886.

All these are bright, sprightly children.

#### BUSINESS MATTERS.

In the fall of 1874, Jesse engaged in quarrying stone for pavements and walls. He owned no real estate, but the writer built him a house on a part of out lot No. 26, of Ewing and Hanna's addition to the town of Wabash,



costing \$1,100 and gave it to him without interest as a part of his distributive share of his father's estate. Meantime his father had purchased 360 acres of farm land in Blackford county, Indiana, where he proposed to settle those of his children who desired a home of this kind. Jesse and his younger brother Edwin H. accepted of this proposition, and moved to it in November 1881; here they continued farm labor until the spring of 1884, when Jesse moved on his own land, situated in the South half of the South-east quarter, Section No. 28 North, range 11 East. Here he erected a new house, one and one-half stories high, and finished it neatly; here he lives and here he expects to raise his growing family. He sold his house and lot at Wabash for \$1,200, paid his debts and applied the balance to needed improvements. The land he now owns was rated at \$23 per acre, equal to \$1,840 and conveyed to him in fee simple. At this date (1889) he still resides on this land and is one of Blackford county's most substantial and useful citizens.

### EDWIN H. FORD.

Son of James and America Ford, son of James Ford Sr., son of Henry Ford.

"Edwin Holton Ford, one of the prominent young farmers of Harrison township, is a native of Indiana, born in Wabash, Wabash county, January 12th, 1861, a son of Dr. James and America [Holton] Ford, his father being a very prominent physician of Wabash. He was raised in his native county, and was given good educational advantages, attending first the schools of Wabash and later Lehigh University, Pennsylvania, and Butler University, Indiana. On leaving school he decided to devote his attention to Agriculture; and accordingly, in 1880, located in Blackford county, where he now owns two hundred acres of choice land. He is engaged in general farming, and also makes a specialty of raising the better grades of horses and cattle. In politics he is a Republican. In 1883 he was elected a Justice of the Peace, a position he is well qualified to fill. He is a member of the Phi Delta Theta Society, and also of the Knights of Pythias,

Blackford Lodge No. 135. Mr. Ford is a young man of genial manners, and in the few years he has lived in Blackford county has made many friends.'—See History of Blackford county, page 88o.

Edwin is the youngest member of the family; is six feet one inch high, and weighs 170 pounds; complexion fair and ruddy, hair auburn, eyes dark hazel, temperament very active, and has a large amount of "pluck" in his make-up. He is not a member of any church; is polite and agreeable, and is honorable in all his transactions. Since the above was written, a fine gas well has been drilled on his farm, yielding abundance of the fluid.

For several months of the present year [1889] he was engaged in securing territory for the Salamonie Mining and Gas Company of Fort Wayne, Indiana; and, also, territory for the Silurian Natural Gas and Oil Company of Lima, Ohio. In June, this year, he formed a partnership with Samuel S. Carrell, of Hartford City, Indiana, in the Real Estate, Loan and Insurance business, but still keeping up his connection with the other companies.

## GROUP II.

### HANNAH FORD.

(SECOND CHILD OF HENRY FORD.)

Hannah Ford was born in Maryland, probably, about the year 1773. When she reached her majority she married a man whose name was Reuben Huff, while the family yet lived in Virginia. Shortly after this event, Huff and his wife moved to the Territory of Indiana, and settled on a farm 110 miles below the Falls of the Ohio River. They had several children, but the number and names are unknown. They owned slaves, and considerable other property. Grandmother Ford visited them at this place, but Aunt had died a few days before she got there. Huff now sold out, and left the Territory. This is the last that is known of them by the writer. All efforts to trace them have been unavailing.

GROUP III.

HUGH FORD, SR.

Third son of Henry Ford, Sr., and twin with Hester.

Almost nothing was known by me of this member of the Ford family; but a letter was written to the postmaster at Johnstown, Licking county, Ohio, requesting him to give this letter and the one inside of it to Hugh Ford, Sr., or any of his male descendants. In a few days the following letter was received:

JOHNSTOWN, LICKING COUNTY, OHIO, February 3, 1887.

COUSIN FORD:

"I was glad to receive a letter from any of Father's relatives. Father didn't know anything about his folks. It seems strange that they should get separated so they could not find where each other lived.

"Hugh Ford came from Maryland and settled in Belmont county, Ohio, and lived there until 1832; then he moved to Licking county. They lived here until death, which I will explain in my next letter. My sister has father's Bible; I will have to see that before I can give the dates correctly." \* \* \* \*

"Let this do for the present, and when I get the record I will give all the particulars.

"Excuse bad writing; I am getting pretty shaky.

"Yours truly,"

HUGH FORD JR.

In his second letter he says: "I received your letter, and was glad to hear from you. Father's Record is as follows:

"Hugh Ford Sr. was a twin with Hester Ford, and was born January 5th, 1775, and died January 28th, 1859. Ann Ford, his wife, was the daughter of Joseph Kirk, was born December 26th, 1777, and was married to Hugh Ford September 18th, 1800. She died in Licking county August 17th, 1851, aged 73 years, 7 months and three days.

"Hugh Ford united with the M. E. church at an early day; was a Local Preacher, a class leader, and a prominent man in the church. In the year 1829 or 1830 he became unsettled in his mind on the question of Baptism. He had been baptised by sprinkling, but wanted to be immersed; his church refused to do this. Then he withdrew from this Denomination, and united with the Disciple, or Christian body, and was immersed. In this church he labored, lived, and died.

"Father was in the War of 1812; was in the battle of Tippecanoe, and served in the Army under William Henry Harrison for six months. For this service he got from the Government a certificate for one hundred and sixty acres of land, but did not get it until many years after the War.

"He was a prominent man in politics, was a Jeffersonian Democrat, and an active worker in his party.

#### HUGH FORD'S CHILDREN.

Joseph, born May 29th, 1801, died October 23rd, 1801.

Rachel, born January 15th, 1803, died October 7th, 1805.

Sarah, born May 3rd, 1804, died March 2nd, 1882: never married.

Henry, born September 22nd, 1805, died July 31st, 1822, aged 16 years.

Mary, born May 5th, 1807, died August 1st, 1880, aged 73 years.

Priscilla, born February 22nd, 1809, died August 10th, 1875, aged 66 years.

Anna, born July 20th, 1810, died August 17th, 1851; aged 41 years.

Vatchel M., born May 27th, 1812, living; postoffice—Sunbury, Delaware county, Ohio.

Hugh, born April 29th, 1814, living; postoffice—Johnstown, Licking county, Ohio.

Eliza, born April 13th, 1816, living; postoffice—Croton, Licking county, Ohio.

Thomas, born April 1st, 1818, living; postoffice—Newnan, Georgia.

“Father was a farmer, and his sons also.

“Yours truly,”

HUGH FORD, JR.

N. B. “I forgot to mention that father was a church member for forty or fifty years.”

I know nothing personally of this family. My father moved from Harrison county, Ohio to Richland county, and Hugh, Sr, moved from Belmont county, Ohio to Licking county some time after; neither knew what had become of the other.

The two oldest children of this parent, Joseph and Rachel, died in infancy.

Sarah lived to be seventy-seven years of age, and never married.

Henry, the fourth child, died at sixteen.

History of Mary, the fifth child, as given by her brother Vatchel:

“My sister Mary married John Collier, and she bore him seven children, three girls and four boys, viz:

“Minerva Ann, married Edwin Adams, and she was childless.

“Emily, married and had children, but I do not know how many, nor their names.

“Naomi, not married.

“Vatchel Ford Collier, married, and had four children. one girl and three boys.

“Edwin Collier had no children.

“John, married, and had one male child, a deaf mute. Some two or three years after this event his wife died. I don't know if he married again.

“Thomas, the youngest of Mary's family, was not yet married when I last heard from him.”

Priscilla Ford, sixth child, daughter of Hugh, Sr.:

“My sister Priscilla,” says Vatchel, “married John Kennon. She bore him five children, two girls and three boys.”

Ann, the seventh child of Hugh, Sr.:

“Ann was twice married, and had no children.”

This concise history of Hugh Ford, Sr.'s seven oldest children, with their posterity, is just as it was given me by his son Vatchel. The other members of this numerous family are written further on in their regular order.

“My sisters,” says Vatchel, “were all strict church members. Sarah and Ann were Methodists; Mary and Priscilla were Disciples. I belong to no church, nor have I, but have read the Scriptures a great deal, regularly and promiscuously.”

This ends the history of Hugh's seven oldest children, so far as known to me.

### VATCHEL METCALF FORD.

Son of Hugh, son of Henry Ford.—A unique history, given as he wrote it.

Vatchel M. Ford, son of Hugh and Ann Ford, was born in Kirkwood township, Belmont county, one and a half miles west of Fairview, Ohio, on May 27th, 1812.

“I emigrated,” he says, “with my father and family, to the extreme part of Licking county, Ohio, landing on a farm that father had bought the fall previous, on the 10th day of April, 1832. I remained with my father and family until I was twenty-one years of age: then (or a few days after), had you been there, you would have seen a poor boy strike out afoot and alone, with

a small bundle of poor clothes on his back and 62½ cents in his pocket. Arriving at Newark, twenty-three miles from home, at 12 o'clock, noon, I got a dram of whisky and a lunch for dinner, and then lit out for Jacktown, on the National Road, where you might have seen (had you looked that way) 'Paddy on the turn-pike, pounding up lime-rock,' in the employ of the State. I remained at that about a month, then went four miles west to the village of Hebron, where the National Road crosses the canal. Here I acted as boss, or overseer, of the stoneyard on the bank of the canal. The stone for the road was boated down the canal. I remained there until the supply of stone was finished; then went to breaking stone again, remained at that about a month and a half, when the demand was satisfied; then returned home afoot and alone, had been gone about three months.

"In the fall of 1833, I traded in Newark, for a stable-horse, with which I made the money to buy the first 100 acres of heavy timber land with; then bought 400 acres joining and sold 300 of it, clearing about enough to pay for the other 100; then I had 200 acres."

"In the winter of 1834-5, I taught a three month's term of school by subscription; the next winter I went to school three months; then the next six winters in succession, I taught a three month's term of district school."

"In May, 7th, 1840, I married a neighbor's girl by the name of Elizabeth Kreager and moved her out into the woods where I had cleared up a garden and a potato patch and built a log house, where we commenced hard work in the woods, about a mile from any road, except those I had cut through the forest. The fall of 1840, an old Baptist preacher and my wife's step father came out in the woods to see us and to engage me to teach a winter term of school, three miles from any house. I told them that was impossible. I could not leave my wife in the woods, neither could I walk it; the old minister could not take no for an answer. He said you have a good horse, you can ride in, and I will take good care of your horse and have him taken in from the school house

in the morning and brought back at evening, and give you your dinner; so I taught that school, riding six miles a day, and doing my chores night and morning, putting in full time in the school. The next winter, 1841-2, I taught a winter term in the adjoining district about one and a half miles off, boarding home, doing my chores. This is the last and end of my school teaching.'

'I now put in my time in the woods clearing up my farm, and working almost day and night, until my health began to fail; then I bought a small farm of fifty-two acres adjoining the village of Centerville, in the centre of Harlem Township, Delaware county, Ohio, about three miles from my farm; here I ran the hotel and my little farm to good advantage for some years; then sold it for double the price I gave, and moved back again upon my old farm in 1857. Now I bought another hundred acres adjoining, making me a farm of 300 acres; run this farm about ten years, then bought a hotel in Johnstown, Licking county, Ohio, and run that ten years, then moved back on my farm and run it until my health failed; then rented it to my son-in-law; and in the year 1879 moved to Sunbury, where I had property, and where I am living, Jan. A. D., 1889.'

Elizabeth Kreager, Vatchel's wife, was born July 15th, 1817, and still lives. No history of this lady was given me, but she bears the name of an excellent woman, morally, socially and practically. Her grand-daughter writes me October 15, 1889, this lady died Thursday, October 3rd, 1889.

#### FAMILY RECORD.

Benjamin F., born March 14, 1841, died December 30, 1873; one daughter, Henrietta.

Jerusha A., born February 28, 1843, widow, postoffice, Sunbury, Delaware county, Ohio.

James K. Polk, born February 16, 1845, died October 15th, 1845; have one daughter and one son.

Henrietta P., born August 26th, 1846, died March 1st, 1870: 24 0 years old.



Thomas Benton, born February 21st, 1848, lives; postoffice, Sunbury, Delaware county, Ohio.

Hannah, born March 29th, 1850, died September 7th, 1851: babe.

Sarah E. born July 18th, 1853; single; postoffice, Green, Delaware county, Ohio.

Mary Louisa, born April 18th, 1856; postoffice, Johnstown, Licking county, Ohio; had three girls and four boys.

Benjamin F. Ford was a farmer and married to Delia Huff, by whom he had two daughters and one son; one daughter, Henrietta, still lives with her grandfather. Henrietta Ford is 18 years old, is a beautiful woman, physically as well as mentally, is a graduate of a high school and by profession, a teacher.

Jerusha Ford (Green) was raised and educated in Licking county, Ohio, and was married to Lewis D. Green on August 21st, 1846. Mr. Green deceased, January 18th, 1881, having four children, two living and two dead. Mrs. Green was well educated and taught eight terms of school before she married. She now keeps a millinery store: is a good liver and is as regarded the "best business woman in Sunbury." Since the above was written Mrs. Henrietta Ford informs me that "Jerusha Green is Jerusha Green no more." She was married to Dr. Mann about five weeks ago, about September 10th, 1889, and now lives at Centre Village, Delaware county, Ohio. Her daughter, Daisy E. Green is well educated, a fine piano player and landscape painter and is regarded as "an accomplished lady." Her son was born January 25th, 1878 and bears the name of his grandfather, "Vatchel Metcalf," and is in school.

Henrietta: no history of her.

Mary Louisa Ford, daughter of Vatchel and Elizabeth Ford, was educated in the schools of the country, and when fully grown was married to Howard Baker by whom she had one daughter, Blanche, now near 10 years old—born March 3rd, 1878. Mr. Baker died January 6th, 1881. On October 29th, 1885, she

married Robert Barrick; from this union no issue. He enlisted at Mt. Vernon, Knox county, Ohio, on May 1864, in Company B, 142nd Ohio Volunteer Infantry; was wounded and in hospital at Point of Rocks, Virginia, six weeks; then put on light duty until discharged at Camp Chase, September 2nd, 1864; is a member of Lemont Post, G. A. R.

### THOMAS BENTON FORD.

Son of Vatchel Ford, of Sunbury, Delaware county, Ohio.

Thomas Benton Ford was raised on the farm and educated in the schools of the country, and when he reached his majority, he married Ellen Sarah Mains, of Newark, Ohio, November 10th, 1885. From this marriage sprang one daughter, born November 2nd, 1886. His business has been, hitherto, that of a druggist; he is now out of business.

This man is a fine specimen of the genus homo, is retiring in manners and of a very kind disposition. He is regarded, where known, as a "good business man and a worthy citizen." In politics he is a Democrat; does not belong to any religious organization but is Protestant in principle.

The Sunbury News of October 10th, 1889, contained the following obituary notice, though not wholly unexpected, gave us a sorrowful surprise: as stated by Hittie, "so must it be with all of us." Grandmother was taken sick the first week of August and for some nine weeks she was very sick. Once she got better, but soon grew worse and on the third day of October last, she very quietly and peacefully died.

#### OBITUARY.

Elizabeth Kreager was born July 15, 1817. May 7th, A. D. 1840, she was married to Vatchel M. Ford. There were eight

children born to them, four of whom are living. She was a faithful member of the Disciple church for upward of 30 years. During her sickness she was happy in her faith in her Lord and was willing to go at His bidding. She died October 3rd, 1889, aged 72 years, 2 months and 18 days. Funeral services conducted at the house by Rev. T. D. Davis. The remains were taken to Johnstown for interment.

## HUGH FORD, JR.

Ninth child of Hugh Ford, Sr., son of Henry Ford.

“Hugh Ford, jr., was born in the year 1814, April 29, and was raised and educated on his father’s farm in Kirkwood Township, Belmont county, Ohio, until 1832. “Hugh, Sr. and Ann Ford came to the township, Monroe, where he has since remained. He married Ann Eliza Davis, November 5th, 1840. She was born March 6th, 1819, in West Chester county, New York. They had four children; Priscilla B., was born August 31, 1842, and died August 27, 1851; William Henry was born August 6, 1845; Elizabeth A., September 26, 1847; Isabel, June 22, 1850; died August 11, 1850. When Mr. Ford, sr., came to the township he purchased 447 acres in the township and 200 acres adjoining in Delaware county—military land, and purchased at \$1.25 cents an acre. Mrs. Ford’s parents, Daniel and Priscilla Davis, were eastern people of English descent.” See history of Licking County, Ohio, page 669.

The writer visited this family September 17, 1888, and found them and Cousin Hugh and all the children respectable people, and wealthy. He says in his letter, quoted above, “I sold my farm in ’56 and moved to Johnstown and have lived here ever since. I have two children living and two dead. William H. Ford, next door to me, is a physician and has a good practice. My daughter Elizabeth, married a man by the name of French. They live just outside the corporation.”

Hugh, in politics is a loyal Democrat and was a member in good standing in the Presbyterian church, but when the war broke out his minister, and perhaps some of the members "abused the Democrats shamefully." Then he withdrew from the church and does not belong to any religious body. He bears the name of an honest man, a true friend, and a hospitable citizen.

### WILLIAM HENRY FORD.

Son of Hugh, Jr., son of Hugh, Sr., son of Henry Ford.

The writer visited William H. Ford, M. D., September 18, 1888, and found him and his estimable wife happily situated in Johnstown, Licking county, Ohio. He is regarded as an "excellent physician, a good man, and is esteemed by all his neighbors." He is a fine specimen of the Ford type. The following paragraph is taken from the history of Licking county, Ohio, page 669.

"William H. Ford, a physician, was born in Monroe Township, August 6th, 1845; was educated in the public schools of Johnstown. After reading medicine for four years with Dr. Charles Stimson, of Newark, he entered the college of physicians and surgeons, of Philadelphia, in the Winter of 1864, and graduated in the class of 1865. After graduating, he returned to Johnstown; he entered upon the practice of his profession, March, 1868. He was married to Miss Mina Conklin, of Hartford, Licking county, Ohio. This lady is a member of a celebrated Conklin family, of New York state. She is the author of a novel "Esther;" or the "False and the True," by Mina Conklin Ford, published in the People's Library, April 6th, 1862. This tale is well written and shows that her ideality is well developed. This family has no children.

The following letter was written to me soon after Hugh Ford's whereabouts were discovered:

JOHNSTOWN, Ohio, February 15th, 1887.

DR. FORD,

DEAR SIR:—"I must say I was most happily surprised to find that I had a relative living so close to me and of the same profession as myself. I assure you it would give me a great deal of pleasure to see you. Why can you not come and make us a visit? I have been doing a general practice for more than twenty years, and in that time have seen some pretty stormy nights, but it is nothing, as the boys say, when you get used to it."

"In regard to my father's family, he, I think, will tell you more than I can; as for myself, I have no family, but my wife. We have never had any children. I wish you would come out as soon as the weather gets good, so we can get around and we will have a general visit with the relations in this part of the country."

"Hoping to hear from you soon, I remain

Yours truly,"

DR. WILLIAM H. FORD.

N. B.—Very thankful for your book. In looking over it, I find a great many ideas that I never had seen before."

### ELIZABETH FORD.

Daughter of Hugh Ford, Jr., of Hugh Ford, Sr., of Henry Ford  
(Third child.)

"Elizabeth was born near Johnstown, Licking county, September 26th, 1847, was educated in the schools of the country and was married to Frank Douglass French, July 25th, 1868. She now lives in a beautiful home at Johnstown, and has the following children, viz: Elmer How, was born April 12th, 1870; Treman was born September 12th, 1871. These two boys have a large brain development, and, if properly trained, will make their mark in the world. Eliza May, was born December 17th, 1878. These child-

ren all attend school. Mrs. French is a kind-hearted woman, an affectionate mother, and sets a very good example before her family. She is a member of the M. E. church and has no enemies in the world. Frank D. French, her husband, enlisted in Johnstown, October 9th, 1861, in company B, 76th regiment, O. V. I., promoted corporal, promoted Surgeon at Young's Point, Louisiana; was put in charge of a colored gang, constructing breast works at Memphis, Tenn.; veteran at Point of Rock, Alabama, January 4th, 1864; gun-shot wound before Atlanta, July 22nd, 1864; in hospital with wound five months at Marietta, Georgia and Chattanooga, Tennessee, then discharged at Columbus, Ohio on January 5th, 1865."

His wound:—The ball entered on the outer, or face of the thigh, six inches below the trochanter major, on left side and came out about the middle of the glutens maximus muscle, on right side, without fracturing ossacrum or spine. He is lame and draws a pension. This man bears the name of an honest, respectable citizen.

### ELIZA FORD [BAKER.]

Tenth child of Hugh Ford, Sr., son of Henry Ford, Sr.

"Eliza Ford was born in Belmont county, Ohio, April 13th, 1816, and moved with the family to Licking county in 1832, and was educated in the schools of the country, and was married to Henry Baker, near Johnstown, in the year 1837. The writer knows nothing of her early history."

The following children sprang from this family, viz:

Levi Hugh born March 19th, 1838, died September 2nd, 1880.

Martin Row was born March 24th, 1840.

Hamilton Theodore was born April 4th, 1842.

Sarah Ann was born September 9th, 1844.

Benton Webster, born September 9th, 1846

William Haze was born September 29th, 1848.

Cloe Priscilla was born October 9th, 1850.

George Pleasant was born September 7th, 1856. Postoffice address, Croton, Licking county, Ohio.

The subjects of this sketch own a good farm, but they have "broken up house-keeping and live with their children."

The writer visited the family September 18th, 1888, but could stay only four hours and could not get a history of their children; but they live in the neighborhood and have homes of their own.

Eliza's relatives inform me that "she is a good woman, a nice housekeeper, a kind mother, and a warm-hearted christian.

This woman joined the M. E. church about forty-seven years ago, then the Christian church, and then the Christian Union."

Eliza Baker's husband, Henry Baker, was born June 2nd, 1814, and is yet a stout, active man for his age. Nothing is known by me of his history, only that he was a farmer, and in politics, a strong Democrat.

## THOMAS FORD.

The Eleventh child of Hugh Ford. Sr., son of Henry Ford.

Thomas Ford now living at Newnan, Georgia, was born April 1st, 1818. He was raised on his father's farm and educated in the schools of the country, as his brothers and sisters were, in Belmont county, Ohio, and "emigrated to the extreme part of Licking county on the 10th day of April, 1832." He assisted his father here in clearing up his farm.

"I was married," he says, "to Sarah Hanover, November 28th, 1844." From this union sprang the following children, viz:

David, born October 31st, 1845.

John, born March 20th, 1847.

Hugh, born September 14th, 1848.

Frank, born June 24th, 1850, died September 12th, 1851.

Henry, born September 14th, 1852.

Charlotte, born February 10th, 1854, died April 8th, 1873. Age, 19 years, 1 month, 28 days.

Lyman, born August 17th, 1856.

Mary Ellen, born October 2nd, 1858, died September 6th, 1878. Age, 19 years, 11 months, 4 days.

Sarah Amanda, born January 27th, 1861.

Ida Chalista, born March 4th, 1863.

Emily Jerusha, born June 1st, 1867.

“Mary Ellen was married to Thomas Seals, by whom she had two children; names and dates not given.”

The writer stops here, and then, in his very concise letter, he states that “I was ordained in the United Brethren church in 1862.”

Yours with respect,

THOMAS FORD.

This is the last member of Uncle Hugh Ford's family. I have no history of Sarah Ford, Hugh's third child; she lived to her 77th year; never was married. Joseph and Rachel, the first two children died in infancy; Henry, the fourth child, died when 16 years old. The history of Hugh, Sr., is correct as far as written; but it is all the writer could obtain.



## GROUP IV.

## HESTER FORD.

1

(Fourth child.) Daughter of Henry and Rachel Ford.

Hester Ford, the fourth child of Henry and Rachel Ford, and a twin with Hugh; was born in Maryland in the year 1775 and died at her home in Richland county, Ohio, probably in the year 1824, and was buried on the right side of her mother and oldest brother, in Mifflin township, Richland county, Ohio.

The writer knows nothing of her early history, only that she was raised at home and educated as were the other children.

Hester was married to Charles Young in Brook county, Virginia, about the year 1791. They moved to Harrison county, Ohio, in 1803. With her husband and family they moved to Richland county, Ohio, in the year 1815, where she lived until she died. She was the mother of four daughters and eight sons. All of these children reached maturity, all married and all raised families.

Aunt was retiring in manners, a nice housekeeper and was regarded by all the neighbors as an "excellent woman."

One feature of her life is worthy of note. It rests on her great will power, sound judgment, steadiness of purpose and indomitable perseverance. The Youngs were fickle, but she, like the balance-wheel, steadied every motion; her son David, and daughter Rachel Gladden, were fair types of her.

## CHARLES YOUNG.

Charles Young, the husband of Hester Ford Young, was born in the year 1767, and died November 1845. He was raised in Virginia, and was a contemporary of George Washington. He was probably of German origin.

After he moved to Cadiz, Ohio, he cleared up a farm on a hundred acres of land which he had purchased of his brother-in-law, Ford, to whom he was greatly attached; when Ford sold his farm and moved to Mansfield, Young sold his also, and followed; here he bought one hundred acres again of Ford, and cleared up another farm; here he raised his family, and here Aunt died.

Charles Young's favorite instrument of sport during all his younger days, and in fact, until the end of his life, was the rifle. At the age of sixty, he could bring a squirrel down from the tallest tree in the forest without glasses. In the mountains of Virginia, he preferred taking the larger game, as deer, bears, panthers and wolves. He was regarded as the "Nimrod of the Forest."

In the winter he wore a suit of buckskin clothes; it was proof against thorns and winds, and in summer also, against snakes and stinging insects. In his leather girdle, he carried a butcher knife and a hatchet, his flint and steel was his gun-lock; thus equipped, he was at home whenever night over-took him.

"And his faithful dog bore him company."

In deportment, unassuming, a good reader and well informed in the affairs of the country, and was highly esteemed by all his neighbors.

He was, for an uneducated musician, certainly a fine violinist. He came nearer making his fiddle talk than any man I ever heard then or since. On Winter evenings, the young folks of the Ford and Young families would come together and have a dance.

Uncle would furnish the music; some times Charles jr. would play the flute with the fiddle. One of his favorite tunes was:

"Pretty Betty Martin, tiptoe, tiptoe, fine,  
Pretty Betty Martin, tiptoe fine."

Among the old Virginia families and their descendants, dancing, good manners, and politeness were taught as among the fine arts. The dancing master was a good musician as well as an accomplished gentleman, and stood well in society.

He would take a raw country girl or boy, and in three months time, would completely change his or her manners; he taught them, first to govern their tempers, and yield their very action to his control; then like the clay in the potter's hand, he fashioned the vessel to suit himself. The church in the west opposes this teaching as sinful, and it is to be regretted, has put nothing in the place of it. This is written to give the reader an idea of the manners and customs of that epoch.

All families have some peculiar trait of character. The Youngs were high tempered, quick witted, affable and true friends; were strictly temperate, industrious and law-abiding citizens.

Music was a favorite art with all of them. David was a drum major in the United States Army, in the War with England in 1812. The females had well trained voices, and were sweet singers. The males were masters of some musical instrument as well as good singers.

The following children came to this family, viz.:

Henry, born \*1792, died \*1864; he was buried on Section 16, Mifflin township, Richland county, Ohio, known as Cogle's grave-yard.

Isabella, (Ibby) born \*1793, died \*1855.

David, born April 1795, died April 19, 1863.

Rachel, born November 9th, 1800, died May 23rd, 1887.

Sally, a twin, born \*1802, died \*1864.

George, born \*1805, died \*1849.

Charles, born \*1806, died 1874.

Hannah, born \*1807, died 1859 or 1860.

James, born 1809, died \*1830.

Alpheus, born May 15th, 1811, is living.

Hiram, born 1813, is living.

John, born 1815, died \*1864.

\* These births and deaths are approximately correct.

## HENRY YOUNG.

Henry Young, oldest son of Hester and Charles Young, was born in Virginia, in the year 1792, and died about the year 1864. He was buried by the side of his mother on Section 16, in Missin Township, Richland county, Ohio.

He married Nancy Burgett some time in 1821. A numerous family sprung from this union. These names of the children are recollected: James, the oldest, then David, Hester, Nicholas, Hannah and some others. Their Uncle, Alpheus Young, informs me that they are all dead except David. Henry was my father's favorite; by occupation he was a farmer, was a very estimable man, honest, quiet, industrious and generous; he had very few faults and no enemies.

The history of this family has not been attainable.

## ISABELLA YOUNG [TONEYHILL.]

Isabella, (Ibby) oldest daughter of Hester Young, was born about the year 1793, in Virginia, and when fully grown, was married to Basil Toneyhill, by whom she had a number of children. Her oldest son was named Zachariah. Toneyhill was intemperate, and did not provide well for his family, his wife being a spirited woman, and a great worker; a nice housekeeper

and a good neighbor. No greater calamity could befall a woman than to be tied to such a trifling man.

The writer has no history of them, and these statements, made above, are the result of personal observations up to the year 1833.

David Young's history will be found on page 36, q. v.

## RACHEL YOUNG [GLADDEN].

Daughter of Hester Ford Young.

### IN MEMORIAM.

MOTHER RACHEL GLADDEN, MAY 23, 1887.

By Lovzilla Gladden Patterson.

MANSFIELD, OHIO, June 17, 1887.

I waited for weeks after the poor mother "went home," hoping a less partial historian would say a word in memory of the long life just closed; but that duty too seems to fall to me, for it is a duty we owe to the men and women who went before us, to keep their memory green.

For years I have taken pleasure in forming into words the thoughts of those whose tears blinded them as they tried to record some fitting tribute to the memory of those they had loved and lost awhile. And in the case of the poor mother who has gone, the duty becomes a labor of love, and though the tears spring and blind, the rainbow gleams about them, for the infirmities of the years when the grasshopper is a burden were multiplied and intense, and she "longed for death as for the face of a friend," and when it came she was not dismayed, but all through the dark valley "the peace of God was in her looks." She had come a long road, and it was not all smooth.

Born in eighteen hundred, she had lived almost eighty-seven years. The first fifteen in Cadiz, Ohio, and all the rest in Richland county. For more than sixty of those years she lived on the farm in Monroe township, which she still owned when she died.

After my father died in 1874, no place on this earth was home to her. She tried the homes of all her children by turns; each visit ended in the sad refrain, "I want to go home." In the home of her second son Rasselas and his good wife Margaret, she came nearest finding a realization of what was to her impossible, then she took a share of her household goods and arranged them to deceive her homeless heart as far as possible, and so much of kindness and sympathy were given her, for which the whole family owe a lasting debt of gratitude, that till her dying day, "Margaret" was the name of any one who was specially attentive to her. The failing health of that family rendered a change necessary, and amid all the changes, it fell to my lot to receive the charge at last, and for nothing in my past life am I more thankful than that the good Father in Heaven gave me the great strength to bear and the patience to endure what my own broken health would seem impossible from any human stand point, "But Jesus, himself knows how much we can bear, and will save us the rest."

Living in these pioneer times when Mansfield had only a block-house for refuge from the Indians, and three or four dwelling houses, life was a struggle with fortune. The necessities of life cost in some cases, ten times as much as they do now, and even more, and money almost unattainable. So the men labored as though they were giants, and the women were what their Maker intended they should be, "help meet for them."

Mother Gladden exemplified in her life, more than the ordinary number of the domestic virtues recommended to King Lemuel by his mother. These verses might have been written expressly of her.

"She seeketh wool and flax, and worketh willingly with her hands."

"She riseth also while it is yet night, and giveth meat to her household, and a portion to her maidens."

"She perceiveth that her merchandise is good; her candle goeth not out by night."

"She is not afraid of snow, for her household are all clothed with scarlet."

"She looketh well to the ways of household and eateth not the bread of idleness."

Of course these are old fashioned virtues, but in those old fashioned times, they were almost matters of life and death, and yet other verses of that wonderful chapter apply with equal force as—

"She stretcheth forth her hand to the needy," for mother never in her long life turned one away empty from her door.

Her home was the center of hospitality, and though she had nine children of her own to care for in these trying times, yet there was always an orphan or two beneath that roof, who forgot their orphanage in the perfect homeness of the place. One stayed from babyhood till her marriage and loved the foster parents as her own. Others stayed for shorter periods, but with equal affection, and no more heartfelt tears fell on her coffin than the solitary who had been set in that family.

The intense activity of mother's early life, partly natural and partly from necessity, was most likely the cause of her terrible nervous prostration in her last year. When the poor old hands had lost their cunning, it transpired that they had also lost the power to rest, and no wonder that a habit of seventy years should remain.

If the "wool and flax" that mother spun, and sewed, and knit, could be massed in one pile, it would be perfectly astonishing. She not only made clothing for the household, both linen and wool, as the necessity arose, but added abundant adornment. There were fringes, and edgings, and embroideries wherever they seemed to add a touch of beauty. There were yards and yards of curtains that her own hands had spun and bleached to silver whiteness, and they were really beautiful, spun of the finest flax

in threads of three sizes and woven in bars, the fine centers of each one being thin and transparent, and all the edges were trimmed with a hand's breadth of lace-net made from some silver-white thread. Not only were the windows so beautifully draped, but high-post bedsteads were curtained from the ceiling to the floor. She had towels by the dozen, with knotted fringes; bed and table linen in abundance, besides the coarse webs of tow for kitchen towels, grain bags and straw beds. She even spun flax for fine shirts of "eight hundred linen," as they called it, perhaps because there were eight hundred threads in the weaver's reel. I am not sure, but I have in my possession a piece of blue calico spun and woven in my mother's home and sent to Hagerstown to be printed.

What would a woman of to-day think of beginning at the raw material when she needed dresses? Even pulling and cleaning the flax or carding the wool.

Mother never did the the weaving, but everything else—carding, spinning, sewing and knitting; and what wonderful resources the wild woods were for dyes. She seemed to be able to find any color she wanted in some forest product; madder, sumac, oak bark and walnut hulls; even peach leaves entered into the domestic chemistry, and brought forth surprising results; and to that she added all kinds of embroidery known in that day. She had been taught in a school where plain and fancy needle-work were as much a part of the education as reading and writing, and with her love for the beautiful she found or made time for its gratification, even after all hard work.

Of course with all these manifold cares there was always hired help in the house, too, for kitchen and dairy work, and in her last years she could with a little prompting recall the names of twenty-seven girls who had worked for her, some of whom stayed ten to twelve years, and each name seemed to bring some pleasant memory.

Mother was a woman of indomitable will, and would not be conquered by adverse circumstances. When she found that the



schools of her children were superior to her own, and she was in danger of falling behind, as many mothers do, she bought for herself the books that we studied, and kept abreast of the foremost of us all the time. There was no "correcting" the parents in our house.

If we had been capable we might have thrust a sly joke at the dear fair-haired giant of a father, but would have drawn the line at mother, for she had the dignity of the Pope and the pride of the Queen of Sheba. Not a child of us dared repeat the bad words we had heard at school, even to ask if they were bad, and sing, or, as we called it, "by words," and all light songs and foolish jesting were an abomination in her ears. And she hated all impurity, and all lies, as she hated murder.

Where is all that energy now? All that strength of purpose? All that pride of integrity? In the bliss of the purified! How blessed the thought that God can use and purify all that He has made. In all ages that follow time, nothing good is lost, but 'all that is God's shall Christ bring with Him.

For fifty years mother was a faithful member of the Baptist church, and in her intense nature, of course, no other church was quite so near right. But age softened that too; and latterly she forgot all denominational differences and rejoiced in all church prosperity as so much gain for Christ that was coming. The cause that she believed to be right she upheld with her might, was never a lukewarm champion of friend or cause: but was quite sure to be arrayed on the right side, and so had a right to be earnest. She had hated slavery from the beginning, and rejoiced in its destruction, though it cost her the sacrifice of precious years out of the life of her first born and her baby boy, who went into the war when a child and came home a man, wounded and broken in health. Her other hope for her country, that drunkenness should be purged away, was not fulfilled in her life, but she rejoiced to hear of each step gained in that direction.

Her nervousness grew so alarmingly as the spring activities and noises of the city increased, that I began to think of the possibility of taking her to the country for the summer. Her own farm being unavailable, I secured board for her and myself in that second home of my own, mother Patterson's house, where for thirty years my whole being, heart, soul and body, had gone for rest when weary, and had never been disappointed. Never had there been in all these years one moment when faith and love even wavered, and truth and kindness that had been so soothing to myself, were balm to the mother too. She was in the country, which she loved and had so longed for. She had four nurses instead of one, and every one and each vied with the other to do her kindness. She had the country luxuries that were natural to her, beautiful and healthful surroundings, large grounds abloom with flowers, where she could walk in the pure air amid the singing of the birds that she loved. She slept at least one-third more than she did in the noisy city. So we began to hope she would have a good quiet summer, and maybe get back some of her lost powers, but suddenly all was over.

The violent storm of Sunday evening, May 22, affected her nerves exceedingly: even more than usual, and storms had been terribly unnerving to her for the last year. Once in the quiet that succeeded the storm she said to me, "I will soon be home;" and when I said "Which home do you mean, mother?" she said, sweetly and peacefully, "I mean heaven." After the storm had passed we found that God's kindest, sweetest messenger, paralysis, had come, and though at first the symptoms were not at all alarming, she ran down so fast that on Monday night at half-past ten she ceased to breathe; simply that, and nothing more. No sign of suffering, not even a sigh. And her face all that day was full of peace—

"The peace that passeth understanding."

The writer visited this cousin in the summer of 1860, and found abundant evidence of Lovzilla's statements in memoriam of her

wonderful industry and perseverance. The reader will find a parallel case, so far as industry and perseverance are concerned, in the life of her cousin, Mary Ford Young, q. v. The pen of the writer can add nothing more. A beautiful life ended in the Son!

### SOLOMON GLADDEN.

The Honorable Solomon Gladden was born November, 1792, in Washington county, Pa., and died in Richland county, O., January 29, 1874. His early history is unknown to the writer.

He married Rachel Young, daughter of Hester Ford Young, June 3, 1820.

Rachel Young was born November 9, 1800, and died May 23, 1887.

He settled in the woods in Monroe township in the year 1816 or 1818, and hewed out a fine farm where he lived sixty years, until he died. Mr. G., as memory presents him, was over six feet in height, weight 185 pounds, eyes blue or hazel, hair light, brain large and well balanced, and of an active temperament. He was one of those estimable kind whom everybody loved. He had been a soldier under Gen. Harrison in the war of 1812, had held a commission as Justice of the Peace for twelve years, and was elected to the Legislature of Ohio about the year 1831 or 1832. During the rebellion, when the rebel Gen. Morgan invaded Indiana and Ohio, he shouldered his gun, though seventy-three years of age, and went to Columbus, entered the army of Home Guards, and assisted in repelling the invasion of Cincinnati. The Governor, with whom he was acquainted, offered him a horse. "I thank you, Governor," he said, "I am a soldier. I am going on foot." And on foot he went. His patriotism carried him through the service, and he returned home without accident. He abhorred slavery, but he lived to see it abolished.

The following children were born to this family, viz.:

1. Joseph, born on June 7, 1821; died August 30, 1881. He had seven children by his first wife, and two by his second, who survive him.
2. Rasselas Young, born 1823. Has two children, five grandchildren.
3. Esther Hanna, born October 23, 1825. Has four children and six grandchildren.
4. Ursula, born 1827. Has three children and five grandchildren.
5. Madison Achillis, born 1830, and died April 12, 1875. Has three children and four grandchildren.
6. Lovzila Lorinda was born June 31, 1832. No children.
7. Lovzenski, born 1834. Died February, 1851.
8. Mary Jane, born August, 1837. No children.
9. William Franklin, born June, 1842. Has three children.

Joseph Gladden was Captain in the Twenty-third Ohio Volunteer Infantry. His sister, Lovzila, informs me that his son Solomon, only about fifteen years old, and Esther's son Aaron, of about the same age, went with him; they stayed through the war. Esther's other son Rasselas, was in the 120th regiment. Frank, my youngest brother, was in the sixty-fourth regiment until the close. Madison was always an invalid, but went to Virginia with the National Guards. These names include himself, three sons, and three grandsons, were all in the war. Certainly the *patriotism* of this family will never be called in question, even by the enemies of the government. The world is better by their having lived in it: they taught by precept and example: children now unborn will rise up and call them blessed.

## SALLY YOUNG.

Fifth Child of Hester Ford Young.

Sally, a twin, was born in Virginia in 1802, and died in Richland county, Ohio, in 1864. She was a stout, vigorous child until she had an attack of measles, which thickened the vocal chords and impaired her voice so she could never sing. She got her education and training in household affairs with her sisters. She married Charles Baldwin, an eastern man, by whom she had two or three children. Her oldest son's name was Zalman; the next was a daughter, name forgotten. She mixed but little in society; her happiness was drawn measurably from her environment and her immediate friends. She was a kind mother and a true friend.

Her husband was a pure man, very industrious, a kind neighbor, a reliable friend. By occupation a lumberman.

## GEORGE YOUNG.

Sixth Child of Hester Ford Young.

George Young was born about the year 1805 at Cadiz, Ohio, and died at Mansfield, Richland county, Ohio, in 1849. He grew up as a farmer, and was educated in the schools of the country, as the other members of the family were. He married a Miss Crusan, and had a family, but do not know how many nor the names of the children. He and his cousin, Nicholas Ford, were chums and always together. Nothing is known of his wife or her relations. He was regarded in the neighborhood where he lived as an honest, peaceable and industrious man; strictly temperate, and a good neighbor. His brother Hiram informs me that he has one son, Sweeny, living a few miles north of Mansfield, Ohio, and is doing well.

## CHARLES YOUNG.

Seventh Child of Hester Ford Young.

Charles Young was born in Cadiz, Ohio, in the year 1806, and died at Mansfield 1874. He was educated and grew up on his father's farm to habits of industry and frugality, and farming was his life-business. He married Rachel Wolf, and had a numerous family (ten—all boys), about which the writer knows nothing. In the fall of 1848 he moved to Wabash county, Ind., and stayed one week viewing the country, but was not pleased with it, and then returned to Mansfield again and purchased a farm there. Nothing is known of him since. His children are all dead but three boys. He was a very companionable man, honest, temperate, industrious and neighborly. Since writing the above I learn that he has one son living at Newville, Ohio, named David, and another, Russell, lives near Lexington, Ohio, and is a farmer. John is a farmer also, and lives at Ontario, Ohio.

## HANNAH.

Eighth Child of Hester Ford Young.

Hannah Young was born at Cadiz, Ohio, in 1807, and was taken to Mansfield, in 1815, where she grew up and was educated with the other members of the family. After her mother's death she was her father's housekeeper, which position she filled with satisfaction to all concerned. She was naturally intelligent, and amiable in disposition. She was married to Thomas Roland, by whom, it is said, she had two daughters and three sons. Roland died, leaving her a widow with five small children to support. They were living in 1860 at Lexington, Richland county, Ohio. Nothing is known of them since. In good qualities, she would compare favorably with any member of the Young family.

## JAMES YOUNG.

Ninth Child of Hester Ford Young.

James Ford Young was born at Cadiz, Ohio, in the year 1809, and came with the family to Mansfield, Ohio, in 1815. He received a common school education, and when of proper age he learned the smithing business with his older brother David; when free, he erected a shop of his own in the west side of Stark county, Ohio. He married a Miss Catherine Walker, of Osenburg, but shortly after an enemy put arsenic in his coffee, from the effects of which he died in a few days; this occurred in the fall of 1830. Nothing is known of his family since. He was a useful, kind-hearted man, ever ready to accommodate a friend.

## ALPHEUS YOUNG.

Tenth Child of Hester Ford Young.

Alpheus Young, now of Larwill, Whitley county, Ind., was born at Cadiz, Ohio, on May 16, 1811, and moved with the family to Richland county, Ohio, in the fall of 1815, and was raised on his father's farm until some time after his mother's death (1822). His opportunity for an education was not as good as that of the older members of the family, yet he got a fair English education for that time, as will appear further on. He was the sawyer, and ran his brother-in-law's mill for one year. The writer came to Indiana in the year 1833, and in a short time Alpheus came also; he entered my school and completed his arithmetic, English grammar, and, perhaps, geography; was of much assistance to me, for there were too many scholars for one teacher. He had an impediment in his speech, and left for Cincinnati to be cured of it in the spring of 1834; from this time until February 14, 1889, I knew not what had become of him, or where he was; but acci-

dentally I found him within forty miles of Wabash city. This is his letter in part:

LARWILL, WHITLEY COUNTY, IND.,        }  
February 14, 1889.                        }

" DR. JAMES FORD:

" Dear Cousin—I must confess I was happily surprised to get a letter from you. I almost despaired of ever hearing from you again. I understood some years ago that you was in Wabash, but did not know whether you were there yet, or what had become of you. I regret to say that I am not able to accommodate you with satisfactory information you desire about my people. They are all dead except Hiram and myself. Hiram lives in Nevada, east of Upper Sandusky.

" I shall be much pleased to get one of your books, for I know it will be interesting.

" Yours with respect,

" ALPHEUS YOUNG "

He states in another part of his letter that "My wife died in the year 1877, and I am living with my children, and now with my son William Edwin Young, and have not kept house for nine years. I am very comfortably provided for."

These are his children's names as given by himself:

" Andrew Jackson was born April 26, 1844. He now lives at Lima, Ohio.

Louisa Jane was born February 7, 1846. She married a lawyer whose name is H. Reynolds, postoffice address Custer City. D. C. T.

John Wesley, born January 15, 1848. Dead.

William Edwin, born May 8, 1849. Lives at Larwill, Whitley county, Ind.

Florence Amelia, born August 5, 1852. She now lives at Ligonier, Noble county, Ind., and married George Hersy, a plasterer.

Curtice Alvy, born February 26, 1855. He now lives in Charleston, S. C., and is a machinist.



Francis Roland, born July 2, 1857. Did live in San Francisco, Cal.

Victoria Alice, born November 23, 1859. She was married to George W. Sterling, a farmer; postoffice address Larwill, Whitely county, Ind.

All living so far as I know, but John Wesley. My children are scattered over a wide expanse of territory."

"My health is very good; it never was better than it is now; I was always healthy."

"Well, Cousin James, I would be very glad to see you. I often think of the good times we used to have in our youthful days."

Yes, so do I. We were like two peas in the same pod, sheltered and nourished alike, but when it burst we dropped out—you there, I here; thus we shall never return to the parent stem again until we enter the land of "Panema, the land of hereafter."

#### ALPHEUS YOUNG'S CHILDREN.

I visited this family May 10, 1889. He was living at this time with his son, William Edwin, of whom I shall speak presently. We met at the depot; although we had been separated fifty-five years, we recognized each other at once; it was a warm and happy greeting; each had supposed the other dead, but the sunshine of youth had kissed our hearts warm and tender, then we were one again, and "thanked Him who doeth all things well" for our happy re-union; we talked of our childhood sports, our boyhood days, our vicissitudes to manhood, and the hardships and privations incident to that age; mentally, we lived our lives over again in part, and forgot that we were old and ready to pass away.

Three happy days were spent with this cousin; then with full hearts, the parting hand was taken.

It should have been mentioned above that he is a natural musician; his instrument is the clarionet; he also plays on the piano.

## ANDREW J. YOUNG.

Andrew J. Young's early history is unknown to the writer. He is a cooper by occupation. He enlisted in the Eighty-ninth regiment, Company I, of the Indiana infantry for three years. He was taken prisoner at Mumfordsville, Ky., and paroled, and was soon exchanged. He served his time out and was honorably discharged. Nothing more is known of his history.

## WILLIAM E. YOUNG.

William Edwin Young lives at Larwill, Whitley county, Ind. He married Alice Amanda Young January 17, 1877. Her maiden name was Young, but she belonged to another stock of Youngs in no way related to her husband.

She was born March 5, 1859. Thus far they are childless. She is a very sprightly woman and a tidy housekeeper; is now learning telegraphy, instructed by her spouse.

Young has been in the employ of the Fort Wayne and Chicago railroad as telegrapher and ticket agent for the last sixteen years, at \$70 per month. In build and in appearance he resembles the Ford type very much. Their house is nicely furnished, with fine carpets, elegant furniture, and a "parlor grand upright piano." They dress well, go in good society, and are respected by everybody. He owns a good farm in the neighborhood and 160 acres of land in Kansas; also land in Florida.

## FRANCES R. YOUNG.

Francis R. Young served five years in the United States regular army, since the war of 1861-65, as musician.

## VICTORIA ALICE YOUNG.

Victoria Alice Young grew up in the family, and when of proper age married George W. Sterling, by whom she has had two children, Georgiana and Myrtle Adelaide. They own an elegantly constructed two story brick house, well furnished, in the suburbs of Larwill, Ind., and a good farm close by with good buildings and well stocked with horses and cattle. They have an abundance of this world's goods to make them comfortable and happy. Mrs. Sterling bears the name of a "good housekeeper, is very industrious, and a kind neighbor."

Nothing is known by me of Alpheus' other children.

## HIRAM YOUNG,

## Eleventh Child of Hester Ford Young.

It was not known what had become of this member of the Young family, but a letter was received from his next oldest brother giving his postoffice address. The following was received in answer to a letter written to him:

NEVADA, O.: April 7, 1889.

"DR. JAMES FORD, Wabash, Ind.:

"DEAR COUSIN—Yours of March 29th received. I have been so very busy I am a little tardy in answering, but trust I am not so late as to inconvenience you in getting the History to press. I was surprised and gratified to receive word from you; it has been an age since I have seen or heard from you. Our ages are such that we may never be able to look upon each other in this life, but hope we may have that pleasure.

"In regard to my history—it is short and uneventful.

"I was born September 16, 1814, in Cadiz, Harrison county, O. My parents moved to Richland county, Ohio, in the fall of 1815,

where I resided thirty-two years. In April, 1840, when 26 years of age, I married Martha Tucker and worked at my trade, carpentering, for about six years, then kept a hotel at Lucas, O., for four years, when I moved to this county, Wyandotte, and was one of the pioneers who struggled for bread and butter in the then almost unbroken forest, with here and there a log cabin to mark the presence of man. I purchased a small tract of land, and with a partner built a saw mill, with which we sawed out a home,—opened a general store to soon supply the demands of a newly laid out railroad, upon which work began soon after my arrival; among our customers we counted a number of Wyandotte-Indians. I cleared my little farm, built a good house, and was just beginning to rest a little from the pioneer life I had led, when my house, just new, took fire and in about one hour I was left without a roof to cover me, and no ready means to build another. I sold this land in a short time and moved to this place, Nevada, and opened a boarding house and with a little farming, purchased thirty acres near town. I continued the struggle for existence with no marked change except the rapid advance of civilization seen around. I still cheerfully met the trials of life, and have the satisfaction of living in my own home and seeing my seven living children married and living at convenient distances.

“ I was too old, and my oldest son William, who is writing this, was too young to take part in the late war.

“ All my sisters are dead: Alpheus and I are all the boys who are living.

“ Well, this is all that I can recollect that will be of any interest to you, and what has been written is of rather a disconnected character and probably lacking in grammatical construction. I am anxious to see a copy of your History. Trusting to hear from you again at an early date, I remain truly yours,

“ HIRAM YOUNG,

“ per WM. YOUNG.”

The above letter is given verbatim as it came to me.

This is Hiram Young's family record:

Martha Tucker, Hiram's wife, was born September 1, 1821; postoffice address, Nevada, O.

Mary Elizabeth, born July 16, 1842; died August 16, 1843.

Lucian E., born September 8, 1844; Nevada, O.

William M., born July 11, 1847; Bucyrus, O.

Eva S., born July 26, 1850; Bucyrus, O.

Norman B., born April 12, 1852; Nevada, O.

Rinaldo P., born February 27, 1855; Bucyrus, O.

Isaac R., born September 3, 1856; Huntington, Ind.

Lindon S., born March 19, 1868; Nevada, O.

#### JOHN YOUNG,

##### Twelfth Child of Hester Ford Young.

John was born in Richland county, Ohio, in the year 1816, and died in 1864; he was a sickly child, had rickets (*rachitis*), was *non compos mentis*; but grew to manhood, married and had a family, was kind and affectionate. Nothing further is known by me of this last member of the Young family.

This ends the history of Hester Ford's posterity.

## ROBERT FORD.

Robert Ford was born in Maryland on the Ford farm, April 4, 1780, and died near Plano, Kendall county, Ill., Nov. 15, 1865. He was taken by his mother to Brook county, Va., in the year 1783 or 1784, where he was raised and educated with the other members of the family. On the 7th day of September, 1802, he married Mary Evans at the age of twenty-two.

Nothing more is known of him by the writer till he settled in Huron county, Ohio, on the farm where he lived up to about the year 1829 or 1830; then he sold it and moved to Pleasant Grove, Tazewell county, Ill. After remaining here for one or two years he moved to the Fox River country and settled on the south side of the river near Plano Station, in Kendall county, Ill. He bought a beautiful tract land of here, partly in the timber and partly in the prairie. His family now nearly all grown, brought this farm to a high state of cultivation and erected good buildings.

My daughter Mary and I visited this family in January, 1855. We found Aunt well, but Uncle had catarrhal trouble in the cist and was confined to his bed. I used the catheter on him every day as long as I stayed.

In politics he was a Republican. His grand-daughter, Kiziah Clark Salfisburg, with whom he lived until he died, says: "He had a great memory, blind as he was, and conversed on all subjects as clearly as if he had seen them himself; as you know, he was a soldier in the war of 1812, and still carried his patriotism until the last; voted for every president from Jefferson down to Abraham Lincoln's second term. I remember his last vote; brother James and I took him to the election, and as the men car-

ried him from the buggy to the polls, he remarked: 'Gentlemen, this is my last vote.' And it was, and there was not a dry eye among them.

"He was generous to a fault; he gave to persons that did not deserve it, until he had barely enough for himself and grandmother." Ford was a modest, good-natured man, and loved innocent sport, yet he was plucky; when fairly aroused he was destitute of fear; was remarkably active and quick. In his younger days a man struck him with his fist, Ford instantly sprang up and struck him in the face with both feet, knocking him speechless on the ground without a word being spoken. That was the end of that altercation.

All his children were educated in the schools of the country. As I learned from their neighbors, were industrious and useful citizens.

Mary Evans was born February 13, 1781, and was married to Robert Ford September 7, 1802, and died March 13, 1870. I have no knowledge of this aunt's history, but she is represented as an excellent woman, sensible and fleet of foot.

This is their family record:

Henry Ford, born June 7, 1803; died March 19, 1849.

Jane Ford, born October 1, 1804; died June 6, 1877.

John Ford, born April 24, 1806; died February 22, 1848.

James Ford, born April 3, 1808; died——

Rachel Ford, born March 20, 1809; died——

Rebecca Ford, born December 3, 1811; lives in Iowa.

Marion E. Ford, born March 11, 1814; died April 15, 1854

## HENRY FORD.

Of Henry Ford's early history the writer knows nothing. When his father lived in Huron county, Ohio, Henry visited our family at Mansfield several times. He was a fine specimen of the Ford type, genial in manner, and very communicative.

Henry Ford, oldest son of Robert Ford, Sr., married Nancy Stansberry at Pleasant Grove, by whom he had four daughters and three sons. He settled in Kendall county, Ill., near Fox River, where nearly all his children were born and raised.

Catherine Ford Holingshead, his oldest child, and Robert moved to Oregon; the first to Bridgeport, Polk county, the second to Salem.

Sarah Ford McKenzie is dead.

Sarilda Ford Saydell lives at Audobon county, Iowa, Brayton postoffice.

William L. Ford, who gives me this history of Henry Ford's family, was born February 8, 1839, and lives at Pavilion, Kendall county, Ill., and lives on the old homestead farm; has two children, a boy and a girl, both married.

Thomas I. Ford was born July 3, 1841, and was shot by a sharpshooter at the siege of Vicksburg July 3, 1863. This man's patriotism demands a more extended history.

Lodima Ford Fisher lives at Portland, Oregon.

Henrietta Ford Smith lives at Martell, Jones county, Iowa.

This is all the information that could be had of this family.

## JANE FORD.

Jane Ford was raised in Huron county, Ohio. When her grand-mother, Rachel Ford, was confined in her last sickness, Jane came to Mansfield, Ohio, to help nurse her until she died April 17, 1822; this is the last the writer knew of this cousin till January, 1855. During this interval she had married Bethuel Clark April 3, 1823, and they had born to them eight sons and six daughters. This is Jane Ford Clark's family record as given me by her youngest daughter, Kiziah Clark Salfsburg.

Bethuel Clark was born August 11, 1800, and died January 22, 1848. He married Jane Ford April 3, 1823. Jane Ford Clark was born October 1, 1803; died June 6, 1877.



Robert Ford Clark was born January 29, 1824, and died January 8, 1859; died without issue.

Mary J. Clark Hanna, born May 15, 1825; postoffice, Portland, Oregon.

Eleanor Clark Holenback was born January 23, 1827; died August 2, 1867; had three sons and two daughters.

Hannah Clark Vanetta, born March 10, 1829; has one son and — daughters; postoffice, Joliet, Illinois.

John Colby Clark, born September 26, 1830; has two sons; no address given.

Thomas Wilson Clark was born July 29, 1832; died July 22, 1846.

Nancy Clark Hewit, born June 25, 1834; has three sons and five daughters, and lives in Kansas.

Bethuel Clark, born March 15, 1836; a soldier in the Indian war, and was drowned in the Williamette river, Oregon, while carrying a government despatch; date of death not given.

Rachel Clark Roberts, born March 6th, 1838. Postoffice, Cedarville, California.

James Ford Clark, born October 25th, 1839; has three sons and one daughter. Postoffice, Mausechunk Chunk, Wabash county, Iowa. He married his cousin, Mariah Ford Halderman.

Henry H. Clark, born July 24th, 1841, and died August 30th, 1863, in the war of the rebellion, in the service of his country. He had no issue.

David B. Clark, born June 9th, 1843; has three sons and one daughter. Postoffice, Millbrook, Illinois. David is still living on the old home farm owned by his father; he lost an eye in the army, and came home with a broken down constitution.

Samuel Clark, born May 16th, 1845, died September 7th, 1845.

Kiziah Clark Salfisburg, born July 28th, 1846; has three sons and three daughters. Postoffice, Pavillion, Illinois.

This cousin wrote me a letter dated Pavillion, January 21, 1889, in which she says "I take the liberty of thus addressing you; my

name is Kiziah Clark Salfsburg, and am the youngest daughter of Jane Ford Clark, your Cousin." After her father died and the war of the rebellion broke out, "My mother," she says, "was left alone with eight small children depending upon her for support; all who could help us were married and gone, and as we grew up, we had to help her, going to school only when she could spare us. What schooling I got was after night when the work was out of the way. I went some after the war; during it I had to help thresh, hauling grain to the machine, and was away for three and four weeks at a time; the men all gone, only the old ones left. Grandfather and grandmother lived with us and we had them to see to. My brother cut his foot and was laid up for six weeks, and just before that, mother broke her arm; we could not hire a man, so I had it all to do. It was March, spring work coming on, and wood to get two miles away. I must cut it down, get it home and make it into fine fuel; then fences to right up, the wheat to put in; could hire a man to sow the grain, but not long enough to plow and drag it in, so that came on me. By the time brother could walk, I was taken down with spinal complaint, and was sick a year. After that I went to school a while, but could not stand it; that was the only chance for an education left for me."

I have taken the liberty to publish this part of her letter; it will illustrate her style of writing, and also the terrible hardships imposed on this family by the war. This lady fully understands this, and her soul is aroused by sorrow and regrets when her mind reverts to the loss of her two brothers and the ruining of the health and constitution of a third.

### JOHN FORD.

John Ford was born April 24, 1826, and died February 28, 1846. He was educated in Huron county, Ohio, as the other members of the family were; was a remarkably stout and active-

man. He was married to Margaret Douglas, his cousin, in the winter of 1833 or 1834, by whom he had one son, James D. Ford, and one daughter, Mariah Ford. Both these children died. His wife Margaret died. Some time after this he married a second wife, Izilah Whitehead; one son, Robert Ford, sprang from this union. My informant, William L. Ford, is unable to give dates or address of any of the members of this family.

## JAMES FORD.

James Ford was born April 3, 1808; died—date not given. He moved to Oregon in March, 1852. James married Mariah Kline at Pleasant Grove and came to Fox River some time after. His family consisted of five sons and three daughters, viz:

William, John, George, Elizabeth, Mary, Robert, Sarah, and Stewart. The postoffice address of all these heirs is or was Bridgeport, Polk County, Oregon. William L. Ford says "the girls are all married, but do not know their husband's names, and can not give the dates.

## RACHEL FORD BURNS.

Rachel Ford was born March 20, 1809, and died, date not given. She married William Burns, and had the following children, viz.: Robert; John; David; Mary J.; Anna T. There is one boy and one girl younger; don't know their names. Have requested them to send dates and names. This family's address is Bridgeport, Polk county, Oregon.

## REBECCA FORD DILLON.

Rebecca Ford was born December 3, 1811, and is probably dead. She married William Dillon by whom she had the following children, viz.: Priscilla; William; Nathan; Levi; Minerva; Emma.

William L. Ford says, "This is all the information I can give of Rebecca's family. I have written to Priscilla Dillon Fargison, postoffice address Leditia, Clark county, Kansas, but have not heard from them."

## MARIAH ELMER FORD.

Mariah E. Ford, the youngest child of Robert Ford, was born April 15, 1854. Nothing more is given of this lady's history.

Robert Ford's grand-son, William L. Ford, wrote me June 15, 1889, thus:

"DR. FORD:—I received your letter, and am pleased to learn that you are writing a History of the Ford family. Will say right here that I want it by all means. In regard to the records of births and deaths of grand-father's family, I think I can get them, but it will be a little time first. Rachel Burns and James Ford were in Oregon. Rebecca Dillon was in Iowa. I think they are all dead. Do you want the names of grand-father's children's children? I am a son of Henry Ford. I live on the home farm. I am the only one of Henry's children living in this State; the most of them are in Oregon; in fact, the most of grand-father's relatives are in Oregon. There are two of Jane Clark's children living here. I will give names and dates in my next letter.

"Yours with respects,

"PAVILION, Kendall Co. Ill.

"W. L. FORD."

Here is a part of a letter Kiziah Clark wrote subsequently,

which I insert without leave. It is given in her laconic style, just as she wrote it:

"Aunt Mariah's oldest son Abram, I am ashamed to say, was in the rebel army; was influenced by a step-brother; married a rebel colonel's daughter; is not worthy the name of cousin; does not deserve a notice in a history of patriots and Union soldiers. Cousin John, the second son, is true blue: also Barton.

"Don't think, cousin, I am hot-headed, but hate a traitor and a coward; besides Cousin Abram fought against his own friends on his father's and mother's side—tried to destroy the best government God's sun ever shone on. We sent two boys [to the army]. I gladly took their places in the field and on the farm. They went—death claimed one, the other lost one eye but stayed to the last."

These patriotic sentiments were not written for the public eye, but should not be lost.

The perpetuity of this government is assured as long as the mothers' hearts are imbued with the love of country and freedom; every fiber of this lady's being, though in the humble walks of life, is filled with the spirit of patriotism, willing to make every sacrifice, even death itself, to protect her home and children. Kiziah Clark Salfisburg is a noble specimen of the race from which she sprung, at least the maternal side.

Robert Ford, Sr., and all his descendants, was and are farmers; taking a deep interest in all public affairs, yet they do not aspire to public offices with few exceptions. Nearly all the information contained in these pages has been furnished by Mrs. Salfisburg and William L. Ford. Thanks!

A LETTER FROM THE HON. GEORGE M. HOLLENBACK.

I will take the liberty to insert here a letter written by the Hon. George M. Hollenback; it explains itself, and gives information

that no person now living could give but himself. This letter was not written for publication, but I hope he will forgive the error, if error it be, of publishing it.

YORKVILLE, ILL., August 1, 1889.

JAMES FORD, M. D., Wabash, Ind.:

MY DEAR SIR:—Your cousin Mrs. Salfisburg, has placed in my hands your letter, July 10, ult.: to her, also, a small manuscript purporting to give a brief history of the Blackhawk war, with the request that I correct it for your use. You will, perhaps, remember from the fact that I met you and your daughter at her mother's when she (Mrs. Salfisburg) was quite a little girl, thirty-four years ago, on the occasion of your visit. I was the teacher of the public school, and took dinner at Mrs. Clark's house with you and your daughter at the time of which you speak. Well, we are all getting older since that time: many of our friends in that robust middle age have passed away, while we are the spared monuments of the mercy of an all-wise Providence.

Now, in regard to the subject matter of your letter: to begin with, must say there is some truth and considerable error in your manuscript. You have evidently got my father's experience strangely interwoven with that of Mr. Ford's. The old gentleman Ford did not come to the Fox River country until the year 1833—one year after the Blackhawk war: as near as my recollection serves me, from the traditions of my own family and what I have gathered from uncle himself, he came to Illinois in 1829 or 1830. He stopped a while, I do not know how long, on the salt fork or branch of the Vermillion river, where there were at that time salt works: from there the family moved to Pleasant Grove, in Tazewell county, where his son Henry was married to Nancy Stanberry. The family residence was at Pleasant Grove during the time of the Black Hawk war. I never heard of any of the sons being in the service except John: he belonged to a horse company, and was in the fight when Major Stillman was defeated

at Old Man's Creek. James Ford was married at Pleasant Grove to Mary Kline and came to Fox River some time after his father, Robert Ford, and his family, consisting of his wife, daughter Mariah and John, came to Fox River the latter part of the summer or early fall of 1833 and went into my father's cabin, which was vacant, and was in possession of it when my father returned from Ohio with his family; they moved out into their own cabin in a little while, and John went to Ohio that winter and there married his cousin, Margaret Douglas. John came back in the spring with his young wife, but her health failing, he returned with her to Ohio, where she died leaving a two-year-old boy named James D.

There was nothing very eventful in the life of Robert Ford after I was old enough to remember him. He was a good neighbor and a kind man, and I remember him with much pleasure. He was a man past middle life when I first remember him, and then he had grand-children nearly grown. He was a meritorious soldier of the war of 1812, and belonged to Capt. Putoff's company of Ohio volunteers. His wife was Mary Evans, and they lived together over sixty years; she was a good wife and mother.

In his younger days the old gentleman was something of a sport—attending horse races and very convivial, and liked all manly athletic sports of the period. Hunting, running, jumping, wrestling, and once in a while engaging in experiences of a more serious character in determining who was the best man when one's veracity or manhood was called in question.

I am very sorry I am not able to give you something more than this hasty sketch, and yet I doubt if any living person can give more than I can. With a single exception the old man's children are all dead. Mrs. Burns was living at last accounts near Lafayette, Yamhill county, Oregon.

If this will be of any satisfaction to you, I shall be quite well paid for the little time I have employed in getting these few ideas together.

Please remember me to your daughter Mary if she is living. I was much pleased with the perusal of your letter giving, as it did, some of your history the past thirty-four years.

In haste, yours, etc.,

GEORGE M. HOLLENBACK



## TOBACCO.

(Botanical Name, *Nicotiana Tobacum*.)

In the following pages we will give from the best authorities known at present, *the effects of tobacco on the brain and nervous system, and through these the terrible invasion of the growth of young people and the general health of the adult.*

The active principle of this plant consists of an alkaloid called *nicotine*. The great chemist Orfila detected *nicotia* in the bodies of dead animals from two to three months after they had been killed by it; it has the remarkable property of resisting decomposition in decaying animal tissues; it also contains an empyrumatic oil, which Mr. Brodie proved to be a most virulent poison; two drops of it injected into the rectum of a dog killed it in five minutes. This oil is generated by burning tobacco in pipes and cigars, and is carried in the mouth and throat by smoking. M. Malapert obtained from the condensed products of a portion of common French smoking tobacco which he burned, as much as nine per cent of *nicotia* or nicotine. Nicotine is a salt, and the active principle of tobacco.

The following extracts are taken from the United States Dispensatory, which is accepted as standard authority by all scientific men wherever the English language is spoken. (See page 819, 14th edition.)

“MEDICAL PROPERTIES AND USES.”

“Tobacco unites with the powers of a sedative narcotic, those of an emetic and diuretic. In addition, when snuffed up the nostrils, it excites violent sneezing and a copious secretion of mucous; when chewed it irritates the mucous membrane of the mouth and increases the flow of saliva, and when injected into the rectum it sometimes operates as a cathartic. Moderately taken it quiets

restlessness, calms mental and corporeal inquietude, and produces a state of general languor or repose, which has great charms for the habituated to the impression. In larger quantities it gives rise to confusion of the head, vertigo, stupor, faintness, nausea, vomiting, and general depression of the nervous and circulatory functions, which if increased eventuates in alarming and even fatal prostration. The symptoms of its excessive action are severe retching, with a most distressing and continued nausea, great feebleness of pulse, coolness of skin, fainting, and sometimes convulsions. It probably operates both through the medium of the nervous system and by entering the circulation. As its local action is a stimulant, we can thus account for the fact that it excites the function of the kidneys at the same time that it reduces nervous and secondarily the arterial power. The experiments of Brodie led to the inference that the functions of the heart is affected by tobacco through the medium of the nervous system. \* \* \* It must have properties peculiarly adapted to the propensities of our nature, to have thus surmounted the first repugnance to its odor and taste, and to have become the passion of so many millions.

*“ When employed in excess it enfeebles digestion, produces emaciation and general debility, and lays the foundation of serious nervous disorders. The late Dr. Chapman informs me that he had met with several instances of mental disorder closely resembling delirium tremens which resulted from its abuse, and which subsided in a few days after it had been abandoned.”*

It is but little used as a medicine on account of its virulent action. The Pennsylvania hospital for the insane, annual report 1850, gives four cases of insanity the origin of which was ascribed to the use of tobacco. Among the ill effects ascribed to the habitual excessive use of tobacco are “ premature gray hairs, baldness and color-blindness.”

Tobacco has been used externally as a cataplasm or poultice to painful tumors, gout and rheumatism, but great care has to be

exercised in the use of it in this way, as it produces alarming symptoms and even death. The writer knows of a number of children being killed with it by applying it on the skin.

#### SECOND WITNESS.

(See "Hygiene and Public Health," by Albert H. Buck, M. D.,  
Page 41.)

"When persons first begin to work at tobacco they almost invariably suffer from headache, and often from nausea and vomiting. They pass sleepless nights and are frequently troubled with diarrhœa. These symptoms are more common in females than in males, and indicate a slight degree of poisoning by nicotine. In a week or two these symptoms wear away, and in the majority of cases no further trouble is experienced.

"That the occupation [of cigar making] bears hardly upon the female sex is the universal observation. According to Kostal, out of 100 female cigar makers from 12 to 16 years of age, 72 fell sick within six months after beginning work. Is this the result of the excessive use of tobacco? They suffer from headaches, præcordial anguish, palpitation, anæmia, lassitude, insomnia, feverishness and anorexia. These symptoms, mainly of chloranæmia, and Layet does not hesitate to attribute them to the effect of premature labor and the bad sanitary condition of their homes.

"Kostal states that abortions are frequent among the women employed in tobacco factories on account of the death of the fetus, and Ruess has discovered nicotine in the amniotic fluid. Heurtoux, Bondit and Schneider have found this alkaloid in the urine, and Kostal affirms that the milk of nursing women has a strong odor of tobacco, although the presence of nicotine cannot be chemically demonstrated.

"It has appeared to me from observations made in cigar factories and in dispensary practice, that sexual development is decidedly retarded in young girls who enter the factories before the sexual evolution has begun, and an investigation made by Dr. N. B. Emerson and myself on the condition of the cigar makers

who work at their trade at home in crowded tenements, we were very much surprised at the smallness of the families. In the 124 families of which one of us took notes, there are only 136 children, or an average of 1.09 to each married couple, and in the 201 families visited by the other there were 329 children, making an average of 1.64 to each married couple. When we consider the swarms of children that usually grow up in tenement houses in the families of laboring and artisan classes, the paucity of offspring in a particular class becomes significant. The following are the figures we obtained:

“Number of houses, 18. Number of families, 124. Number of persons, 414. Aggregate to each, 3.33. Number of children, 136. Average to family, 1.09.

“Number of houses, 23. Number of families, 201. Number of persons, 805. Aggregate to each, 4.0. Number of children, 329. Average to family, 1.63.

“One family was found in which there were seven children. This being so remarkable an exception to the general rule, the family history was inquired into and it was ascertained that the parents had only worked at cigar making four years, having previously been farmers, and having had the greater portion of their numerous progeny while engaged in the latter occupation.”

What is meant by “excessive,” as applied to the use of tobacco? Here is a large class who do not chew, smoke or snuff, but they handle it and inhale its odor, which kills their babes before they are born: the mothers abort and their health is ruined. The deficiency of children is here explained.

#### THIRD WITNESS.

(See Handbook of Therapeutics by Sydney Ringer, M. D.,  
Page 504.)

“Several deaths have occurred through the application of tobacco to the abraded skin; it must be used externally with caution.

“ Tobacco produces nausea and sickness, accompanied by great weakness and faintness. It confuses the ideas, dims the sight, enfeebles the pulse, and makes the skin cold and clammy, with profuse sweating. Owing to its prostrating effects it removes spasm. Tobacco in the form of clyster or administered by the stomach has been employed in colic of the intestines and in strangulated hernia; but in spasmodic diseases, chloroform has quite superseded it. Tobacco smoking excites an abundant secretion of saliva, hence some persons maintain that tobacco smoking aids digestion.

“ Smoking in excess is no doubt a very injurious habit, disordering digestion, lessening the appetite, inducing restlessness at night with disagreeable dreams, and weakening both mind and body. Chronic pharyngitis (disease of the throat), the mucous membrane looking like dirty red velvet, with constant hawking; and also with chronic dyspepsia may, in many instances, be clearly traced to excessive smoking. Even amaurosis [blindness] is said to be caused by excessive smoking. The habitual smoker has generally a thickly coated tongue. The symptoms produced by excessive smoking soon cease when the habit is discontinued.

“ Nicotine tetanizes, by its action on the spinal cord. It paralyzes the cord, the motor nerves, the peripheral nerve endings being first affected: it also paralyzes the muscles.—See Vulpian, Rosenthal, Krockner, Rene.

“ Nicotine, the active principle of tobacco, tetanizes the heart; *i. e.*, rigidly contracts it, and death is the immediate result. Many fall dead from this cause without a moment's warning.”

#### FOURTH WITNESS.

##### *Tobacco a Cause of Disease.*

(See George Wilson, A. M., M. D., pp. 90-91.)

“ No doubt when the habit is carried to excess, it produces functional derangement of the nervous system, palpitation of the heart, certain forms of dyspepsia, and irritation of the throat and lungs.

“ Too many pipes or cigars will cause nausea and depressing sickness even in the most habituated in its use, while it is well known that a few whiffs will suffice to produce the same symptoms in those who try it. It is, therefore, not to be trifled with. Without attributing all the dire effects to it which are laid to its charge in such a wholesale and indiscriminate way by its opponents, there are certain precautions in regard to its use which I think cannot be too strongly insisted on.

“ In the first place, there is no dispute that tobacco smoking when contracted as a habit, has a most deleterious action on boys and lads who have not stopped growing. It arrests their growth, and not only so, but it produces an enervated state of the system, which tends greatly to impair muscular and mental activity. No one, therefore, should learn to smoke or be allowed to smoke when it can be prevented, until the age of eighteen years is reached, and even then I would honestly say, as a smoker, that it is a habit which on the whole had better be dispensed with, especially if one is ambitious and eager to succeed in life. Any one who indulges to such an extent as to render the tongue coated and dry does himself an injury, and when palpitation of the heart or other nervous symptoms are induced, he should leave it off altogether. This ‘old smoker’ opposes it in a ‘wholesale and indiscriminate way’ himself, and then backs it up by an undisputed reason for it.”

We have now given copious extracts from the United States Materia Medica, *Rogers' Therapeutics* and two standard works on Hygiene, showing the effects of tobacco on the human system in health and in disease. The effect of this agent on the brain and nervous system is so thoroughly understood by physicians and writers on hygiene that there is no difference of statement among them.

“ There seems to be good reason to believe that tobacco smoking plays an important part in the production of the disease [cancer], and that it occurs more frequently in those who smoke clay

pipes than in those who use other kinds of pipes, or cigars. Dr. J. Mason Warren gives all the cases of cancer of the lip that occurred in the Massachusetts hospital for forty years, as follows: Whole number of cases, 77; not ascertained, 26; number of those that smoked pipes, 44; number that did not smoke pipes, 7.—See Ashurst's *Encyclopædia of Surgery*, Vol. V., page 470. This is not strange. Tobacco keeps up a constant irritation about the mouth and throat for years which weakens the tissues and forms the proper soil for the propagation of cancer.

“ This weed, says Dr. Philip Mason, after an experience of fifty years' use of it, and all its preparations under whatever name it may be recognized, is a great curse to mankind in this country, and I think in all others. It is not only repugnant to the taste of an individual who never used it, but it is a nasty, dirty, filthy and offensive article. It would seem as though no genteel or well-bred person would or could use it; yet it is indulged in by all classes of society. What stomach but a dog's could look on the filthy pools of amber which are so often seen, especially in a railroad car. Is this not a slander on the dog? If this were all, custom might tolerate it; but ninety-nine out of every hundred who use it, in the end are injured by its use.

“ If chewed it produces thirst and robs the supply of saliva, which is necessary and was designed by nature should be mixed with our food, which is really the first process in digestion. It weakens the powers of the stomach, impairs digestion, and sooner or later it impairs and undermines the nervous system; this I know from sad experience. Those who smoke fare no better; they may not exhaust much saliva, yet there is absorbed into the system the essential oil of the weed in which, in its concentrated state, is a deadly poison.

“ It renders the skin yellow, and by its narcotic influence impairs the nervous powers of the individual, and the degree is in the ratio of its use.

“ The takers of snuff, if possible, fare still worse, as the direct

action is upon the nerves of smell. The nasal openings are plugged up and the person is more or less compelled to breathe through the mouth. Nor is this all; a catarrhal affection is induced; the tone of the voice is impaired, and in inveterate snuff-takers more or less snuff passes into the lungs, interfering with their functions; besides all these consequences they in no wise escape the baneful effects or narcotic influence on the system. I am aware that there are some who contend that it is beneficial. It is contended, too, that it preserves the teeth. This is all humbug! I have made the assertion that for thirty years' close observation and attention to the use of tobacco which I have given it, five hundred persons have been injured to one who has been benefited by it. [This article was written some years before this book was written, but at this time he says, "I fully endorse all I have said in the foregoing remarks, as since writing them after an indulgence in the habit of chewing and smoking tobacco for fifty-five years, I have quit the use of the weed."—P. Mason—Autobiography, pp. 427-S.]

I now approach a thought connected with this subject with some delicacy; so far as the writer knows, it has never been discussed.

#### DOES THE USE OF TOBACCO SCATTER THE GERMS OF DISEASE AMONG THE PEOPLE?

Tobacco does not prevent disease nor stop contagion, for filth is the pabulum that fosters its germs; thus its users are more susceptible to contagious diseases than others; especially so as it enfeebles digestion, weakens the heart, and lowers vitality.

If a man have any contagious disease about him, his saliva, his breath, his sweat, in short, all his secretions may be loaded with the living germs of that disease. Now suppose he enters a rail-car or public hall with a cigar in his mouth, those living organisms (germs) attach themselves to the particles of carbonized tobacco, which form the smoke, are floated into the mouth and



lungs of every individual in the car or building. If he chew, he ejects a puddle of spittle, it dries up, is carried about by the feet, takes the wings of the dust and reaches the mouth and lungs as did the smoke; and if drinking-water be in these rooms, it may be poisoned and impregnate the drinker with contagion.

My experience and observation as a physician with the effects of tobacco on the constitution of man, is very unallogous to the writers quoted above; but being impressed early in life with the idea that tobacco was the cause of more mischief than was attributed to it by my compeers, gave me larger experience and closer observation probably than they had.

#### A CASE.

E. S., aged 60, had been afflicted with waterbrash, sick stomach, headache, nervousness and prostration for a period of three or four years. He had tried the steam-doctors, the Homeopaths, the Allopaths—all failed to cure, then the writer was called; after examining his case, the patient was told that medicine was of no avail in his case; that unless he quit the use of tobacco he could not be cured. This was a new idea to him. "Why, I have been chewing tobacco these forty years, and it never hurt me before; but if this is the cause, I'll quit it." This he did. In less than sixty days he was sound; had gained flesh, and said, "I'm well."—See W. J. Ford's case at page 55. Super; also, page 17.

The writer's personal experience with this narcotic is limited to one chew. About 3 o'clock p. m. August 1, 1824, a chew of cavendish was put in my mouth, and after giving it a few grinds it proved too strong and was swallowed. This, for a boy of twelve summers, was a sad experience; two minutes after it reached the stomach, the earth and sky turned up edgeways and spilled me out, as I then thought. Everything was whirling around, I was blind and exceedingly sick, sweat profusely, and could not raise the head from the ground; vomited freely, but when there was nothing more to come up the retching continued; an attempt to

raise the head produced syncope. Here I lay in the shade of a tree till after dark, then my brother carried me home in his arms. For three days and nights this terrible retching and sickness continued; I was limp as a rag with extreme prostration. At the end of six months recovery from this dreadful narcotic was not complete; and the fumes of tobacco make me sick yet, when I come in contact with them.

In persons who are habitually addicted to the use of tobacco, what particular change in the economy causes them to continue the habit? "There are many articles in common use among mankind," says Carpenter, "such as tobacco, fermented liquors, etc., the use of which can not be said to produce natural enjoyment, since they are at first unpleasant to most persons; yet they first become tolerable, then agreeable, and at last the want of them is felt as a painful privation, and the stimulus must be applied in an increasing degree in order to produce the usual effect. The nervous system of man, being so constituted as to 'grow-to' the mode in which it is habitually called to play. Such an idea is supported by all we know of the formation and persistence of health of the nervo-muscular action. For it is a matter of universal experience that such habits are far more rapidly acquired during periods of infancy, childhood and youth, than they are after the attainment of an adult age; and that the earlier they are acquired, the more tenaciously are they retained. Now it is whilst the organism is growing most rapidly, the greatest amount of new tissue is consequently being formed, that we should expect such new connections to be readily established; and is there, too, that the assimilation is most likely to take-on that new mode of action, which often becomes so habitually a 'second nature' as to keep up a certain acquired mode of nutrition through the whole subsequent life."—*Physiology, pages 486, 515 and 596.*

Tobacco has no nutrition in it; then why acquire the new habit? It fills the system to repletion with its poison for no useful purpose whatever; only to gratify a morbid filthy desire.

These poisons are absorbed through the stomach without any

process of digestion and come in contact with every living cell in the body, and unless it can rid itself of it, it will cumulate, and destroy life; thus it taxes the kidneys, the liver, the skin, and in short every grandular out-let [emunctory] to dispose of it. The narcotism too, partially paralyses, and hampers their action.

#### RACING CREW.

Still less defensible in the use of tobacco during training. Its influence on the nervous system in early life is generally depressing. When the habit is a confirmed one, a gradual abandonment may be necessary to avoid undue depression, but as a rule, less inconvenience will be experienced by an immediate discontinuance on commencing training. Good material for a racing crew will rarely be found among those who are so addicted to tobacco as to be seriously distressed by leaving it off suddenly, while the *morale* of the crew is more easily maintained, if no discrimination is allowed in favor of particular members.

In the long course of training, however, some strictness need not be observed at first, but a limited time may be set, beyond which, entire absence should be insisted upon."—*See Buck Physical exercise, vol. 1, p. 361, and vol. 2, p. 182.*

#### HOW ARE WE TO GET RID OF THIS EVIL?

When men reach the age of forty-five or fifty years, their ideas crystalize, and, unless they be investigators, they scarcely ever change; yet, occasionally, one will do it, especially if he is convinced that he is being injured by it; but many of them indulge in this unwise practice themselves: they sin against light and knowledge, and are a hinderance to others. The Protestant Clergy as a class, do not use tobacco, and should use their influence in their congregations against its use, especially among the young. This statement should apply, also, to Sunday School teachers. Mothers should teach their children not to use it in any way;

should speak of its filthiness; of the time lost in running after it; of the vast expense it makes from year to year, and worst of all, the sickness brought on by it.

Fathers who use tobacco should make an example of themselves by showing their boys what slaves they had been to the habitual use of it without any benefit; he should importune the non-user to never contract the habit. On the other hand many of the follies and vices to which boys are addicted, are copied from the fathers in spite of the mothers' influence to the contrary; every body knows that if the fathers opposed it as earnestly and consistently as the mothers, it would soon be practically abolished. This is true also, of drinking and gambling. Fathers should remember that, a man who has forfeited his life by murder, may be pardoned; a man who has violated a condition of his own well-being can not be pardoned, for there is no pardoning power; it is therefore an unpardonable sin.

There is no nutriment in tobacco; it adds nothing to the tissues of the body; then it is a foreign substance, imparting a deadly poison: corresponding with no function of the system; the glands refusing to secrete it out until the body is wrecked by sickness and prostration, and then only when they "grow-to" the newly formed "habit," as Carpenter expresses it. There is no correspondence, no harmony between the secretory organs; assimilation on the one hand, and the new work to be done, on the other. It is an imposition, against which they rebel, to some extent as long as life exists.

There are a few individuals I admit, who live to a good old age who use tobacco moderately all their adult lives; but for one of these, hundreds may be found who have been injured by it. I desire to impress this fact upon the mind of the reader, that this extra labor is imposed on the secretory organs for the purpose of removing the poison [*nicotine*] of tobacco, and repairing the damage done to the brain and nervous system, which is the cause of so much disturbance. When the poison enters the circulation,

after the new habit is acquired, it narcotizes the system, thus hampering the glands in throwing it out, blunting the intellect and weakening the physical energy.

Tobacco increases the flow of saliva, in which there is a substance called *Ptyoline*, a ferment, the use of which, in the animal economy, is to change starch into grape sugar; this is the first process of digestion, and if this secretion is ejected from the mouth, digestion is impaired from the beginning. Some chewers swallow all the saliva, but all they gain is more than lost by the increase of labor to secrete the narcotine out of the blood and repair the lost nerve energy.

The government of the United States takes boys into the navy, educates and qualifies them to be competent marines, but before they enter the service they are subjected to a rigid examination; a large per cent of them are rejected by reason of defective heart action caused by the use of tobacco, from which they never fully recover.

#### DISINTERESTED REFORMERS.

*Chicago Herald, October 6, 1889.*

"The national convention of cigar makers at New York, ask the state legislature to prevent the manufacture and sale of cigarettes, and say, 'Whereas, the practice of cigarette smoking seriously affects the growth of the trade we represent, we are of the opinion that it has served to demoralize and injure the youth of our country, undermining their health, impairing their mental faculties and rendering them unfit for any useful purpose.'"

The editor remarks ironically: "The cigar makers are a body of singularly unselfish and disinterested reformers." Comment is useless.

These statements corroborate all we have said touching this class of citizens.

#### HEREDITARY HABITS MAY BE FORMED.

"Agassiz," quotes Brown Sequard, "who has made more experiments among animals than any man living, continuing them

upon successive generations and ascertaining what diseases may be transmitted, has stated facts to me which almost defy belief."

"I will give you a few of them. He has found that epilepsy can be induced in guinea pigs by certain operations, and that this disease being so introduced into the system may be transmitted from generation to generation, and thus become hereditary. When such operations have produced malformations of the skin, as is often the case, these also have been transmitted; or, when the paws have been affected by such operations, this peculiarity has also been transmitted."

"Malformation produced by these experiments as a disease during the life of a parent, has been passed down to the off-spring, and even habits arising from disease have been transmitted in the same way."

"In some such case the peculiarity existed in the female, in another it was produced in the male. In the latter instance the male transmitted its own diseased condition to another generation through a healthy female. More than this, the female through whom the diseased descendants had been produced, became herself diseased in the same manner as the male. These facts have a wonderful significance."

"We must be silent for the present since we cannot understand it. All we know is that these peculiarities are sifted through the egg of the female and the spermatie particles of the male and may appear in their progeny."—*Popular Science Monthly*, V. XVI for August, 1872, pp. 521.

These experiments prove the statement made above, that habits acquired by the father may be transmitted to his son and inherited by his posterity.

#### RECAPITULATION.

All writers agree that "tobacco is a powerful narcotic poison and ought not to be trifled with."

It stunts the growth of children. It affects the heart alike in both sexes, tetanizes it. It "produces an enervated state of the

system." It "impairs muscular and mental activity, consequently it destroys the ambition and eagerness to succeed in life."

"It coats the tongue and dries the mouth, and, if continued, "he does himself great injury." It causes baldness and color blindness. It produces diseases of the throat, thickens and stiffens the vocal cords and alters the voice in snufftakers. Statistics show that when females begin working in tobacco, they suffer from headache, heart-anguish, palpitation, poor blood, weakness, loss of sleep, feverishness and vomiting. In young girls from twelve to sixteen years old, out of one hundred, seventy-two fell sick in six months.—Kostal. In women that work in factories, their babies are killed by it before they are born and the mothers suffer abortions and all their dire effects shortly afterward. In young females it stops their growth and prevents the sexual organs from developing until late in life. It is the cause of, or lays the foundation for the development of cancer in the lip and throat, as shown by the cases of General Grant, and Emperor William of Germany. It impairs digestion, causing dyspepsia, flatulence, water-brash and heart burn. It paralyzes the heart and causes sudden death.

Tobacco smoke carries the tab of death with it that all men who have eyes and noses may read it.

#### INTEMPERANCE.

The public use of spirituous liquors is a hackneyed subject and in every bodies' mouth. Its merits or demerits will not be discussed in this article only so far as its constant use tends to create an abnormal and increasing appetite for it, and to show some of its effects on the brain and nervous system.

Alcohol is formed of four parts of carbon of coal, six parts of hydrogen gas, and two parts of oxygen gas; when chemically united, form a compound which should be called liquid coal. It possesses all the elements of rapid combustion; it is absorbed through the stomach without any process of digestion and is immediately carried by the blood into the lungs, where it comes

in contact with the air, gaining more oxygen, it takes fire without flame as it goes, imparting its heat to every fiber in all the tissues of the body. Its composition is now broken up into carbonic acid and water: the water is harmless, but the carbonic acid is a deadly poison and has to be secreted out of the blood, principally through the lungs and liver. For the truth of these statements, ask any chemist or physiologist and he will tell you they are correct.

So far it has imparted a very agreeable stimulus, but it is of short duration: then follows its stupifying—its narcotic effects, sinking the vital forces below the natural standard as far as they had been raised above it; then another drink is required to keep up the agreeable feeling until intoxication supervenes. What is this man's condition now? He is drunk; true, but that is only one of its effects, his blood is loaded with carbonic acid, his brain and nervous system are paralyzed, the muscles refuse to obey his will, his tongue is stiff, he falls to the ground and is unconscious of passing events, the pupil of his eye—ashamed of his conduct, has closed its portal and refuses to admit the light or stands wide open, "he sees not, he hears not and is free from all pain," no sound can awake him until the lungs and glands rid the system of the poison. His temperature is low, he breathes heavily, his heart beats feebly and slowly, and only revives when the system disperses the poison.

What does this case differ from the man who had "grown to" the tobacco habit? Nothing! Conscious suffering was greater in the former, but profound stupor was non-pronounced in the latter: yet the actual damage done to the economy was probably about equal in both cases. This is not an over-drawn picture, divested of its technical terms; it is literally true.

In this case assimilation has yielded to the pressure of additional work, as in the use of the tobacco habit: in short the man has grown into the "new habit."

What is the moral and mental condition of a person who has



contracted these habits? One of the most noticable traits in tobacco users and liquor drinkers is loss of self respect. Go into a public hall or a railroad car where there are a mixed multitude and the first thing that strikes the senses is the fumes of tobacco or whisky or both, for almost every whisky drinker uses tobacco; but this is an unpleasant phase of the subject, yet the writer is pleased to say that there are many well bred people who do not do these things.

How can we get rid of the drink evil—dipsomania?

This question has puzzled the brain of statesmen, moralists and doctors since the days of the "Washingtonians"—1828, and they do not appear to be any nearer a satisfactory solution of it than they did then. The only practical remedy is to quit and stay quit, till the assimilation has changed back to its original condition and they grow out of their acquired habit. It will require more time to grow out of the habit than it did to grow into it, but they can do it if they will stop associating with drinking men and keep away from places where liquor is sold. If his will power is weak or nearly lost, his friends must assist him in an asylum built especially for the inebriate.

The idea has been impressed on the mind of the reader from the first that bone and muscle, brain and nerve, digestion and assimilation, one and all, have been formed in possible harmony with the acquired habit.

Is this acquired habit imparted to his children? He cannot communicate that which he himself does not possess. If he has a constitutional disease or taint, it may be carried over to his offspring for two or three generations: this is true of insanity, consumption and many other diseases. "A stream never raises higher than its fountain." The habit itself will not be carried over to his offspring, for that is acquired, but the desire for that particular kind of stimulous will, and the diathesis or desire will pass from generation to generation unimpaired.

The children of intemperate parents lack will power and self

respect : as a general result a large per cent. of this class fill our jails and poor houses. Females of intemperate fathers suffer deterioration in body and mind but generally escape the habit, for they do not mix in the society of toppers.

The statements made above apply with equal force to those who are addicted to the opium habit.

The idea of "tapering off" is a bad one. It don't taper at all in the right direction.

# SANITARY TOPOGRAPHY.

HEALTH AS AFFECTED BY LAWS GOVERNING LOCAL  
AIR-CURRENTS. (A NEW DISCOVERY.)

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS—HYGIENIC CONDITIONS APPARENT—ATMOSPHERIC INFLUENCES—HISTORY OF THE DISCOVERY, AND THE INVESTIGATIONS FOLLOWING IT—AIR CURRENTS GOVERNED BY LAW—ILLUSTRATIVE DIAGRAMS, AND ACCOMPANYING EXPLANATIONS—ACTIVITIES CAUSED BY THE SUN—THE EFFECT IN DIFFERENT LOCALITIES—MALARIA—EXAMPLES OF THE REMOVAL OF RESIDENCES AS SANITARY SUGGESTIONS, AND THE RESULTS—AIR MOVEMENTS ON LEVEL LANDS—PECULIAR AIR MOVEMENTS—PATHOTOPIA, WHERE NOT TO BUILD A HOUSE—HYGETOPIA, OR WHERE TO BUILD A HOUSE—FACTS ILLUSTRATIVE OF OTHER AIR-CURRENTS—CONCLUSION.

BY JAMES FORD, M. D. (U. S. SURGEON).

## SANITARY TOPOGRAPHY.

## PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

[These pages were written for the people and recently published in the history of Wabash County, Indiana.]

"Hygiene is the art of preserving health. It aims at rendering growth more perfect, decay less rapid, life more vigorous, death more remote."—*Parks*.

§ 1. Local currents\* of air are governed by law, and always move under similar circumstances in the same direction.

§ 2. The air, in dry valleys, in summer and fall seasons is warmer, hence lighter than that of adjacent high lands, and that immediately over the valley.

§ 3. The cool air of the high lands underruns the warmer, lighter atmosphere of the valley; the lighter flows up over the cooler on the elevated lands, cools off, settles down and runs back into the valley; thus forming a revolving elliptical ring (§ 8), which carries and distributes the heat, malaria and germs of disease of the valley on the high lands. These movements take place alike and at the same time on both sides of the valley, and continue at this place [Wabash], until 11 o'clock P. M.

§ 4. The air in the valley, by the loss of heat, shrinks in volume, causing a sag in the upper air, which, by its dynamic force, continues with an accelerated motion, subtending both the other currents. It settles down in a wedge shaped body, with its apex over the center of the valley, reverses both the lateral currents, and when its point is heated by the soil it parts in the middle and runs up the hillsides on the elevated lands. These movements continue until the sun's rays in the morning change them.

§ 5. All these air currents described above form a great

---

\*Local currents are those movements of air confined to the surface of the earth, and do not extend usually, beyond the immediate locality, and are caused by the differences of temperature of hills and valleys, of wet and dry lands, of prairies, adjacent groves, and do not include winds that move steadily in one direction.

pneumatic engine to carry the heat and vapor from the heated low lands, and to distribute over the high grounds and hills. If it be a valley, the machine moves up at the rate of from one to four miles per hour. Malaria and the germs of disease are carried and distributed over the country wherever these air currents move.

§ 6. The question of Health or Disease in any locality, may be determined within 100 feet, *a priori*, by understanding the topography of the locality, as well in prairies as among the hills and valleys.

§ 7. The place for orchards, vineyards and tender plants may be as easily settled as the question of health or disease. They should not usually be placed near the dwelling house.

These observations and experiments were always made of still nights. During the day time the sun's rays render the atmosphere so unsteady that accurate observations cannot be made in this direction.

§ 8. By understanding the foregoing propositions, any person of ordinary intelligence may select a site for a residence, free from malaria and the germs of disease, if such a place can be found on his land.

For the benefit of residents, the names of places and persons are given in full on the following pages.

#### DISCOVERY AND SUBSEQUENT INVESTIGATIONS.

§ 9. After a hard day's ride among the sick on Paw Paw, I returned home weary and hungry, neither myself nor horse having eaten any thing since morning. The fall rains had rendered the roads almost impassable. The roads at this time were mere paths marked out on trees and bushes, and lay, principally, along the Indian trails and were difficult to follow in the night. The road passed through a dense forest of some seven miles, without a house, but my trusty horse brought me home at 8 o'clock P. M. This occurred on the 7th of October, 1843.

§ 10. The people, at this juncture, had plenty to eat, but were

poorly clad; the climate was damp and the country was full of malaria. Their houses were poor, and the incessant labor required to clear away the forests and raise their crops was a heavy tax on their vital forces. Thus they suffered from ague and all that class of diseases arising from over work, dampness and malaria. We had more sickness this fall than had occurred in the two previous years. Cutting away the timber and turning up the virgin soil to the action of light and heat, seemed to increase greatly the germs of disease. The water level was too high.

Two messengers had come and gone, one leaving word to go to Jonathan Keller's, the other to go to Jacob Unger's and a third messenger, still in waiting, desired me to go and see John Lamaroux, living four miles west. All these people had a form of billious remitting fever, and it was desirable to prescribe for them at as early a period as possible, to "cut short" the disease, or, at any rate to modify its character so that the lives of the patients should not be jeopardized. The night was cold, hazy and dark; neither moon nor stars were visible; the air did not move, and a death shade seemed to have settled over the face of nature. Weary and care-worn we plodded along four miles to the ravine of Kintner's Creek and could not tell how we got there. But, while my horse was drinking in the stream, a volume of warm air struck my face, passing gently up the ravine, northward; the odor of decaying vegetation and animal matter from the bed of the Wabash River—a mile and a half away—was freighted upon it.

The hills on each side of this creek are from ninety to one hundred feet high, and the valley itself probably forty rods wide. The heated air filled the ravine from hill to hill, but its depth could not have been more than twenty feet, as it did not rise higher than this on the hill sides. It was now 11 o'clock P. M., and the heated air had just reached this point on its northward course, for it was not felt when the horse first entered the stream.

§ 11. Mr. Lamaroux lived on the opposite side of the creek in the valley and of course his dwelling was submerged in the warm, stinking atmosphere. After prescribing for him, the next point

lay one-half mile south and one and one-half miles west. This brought us to Jonathan Keller's residence on the hill, one mile north of the Wabash River—a malarial district. Two patients were prescribed for here. From this point we retraced the road back eastward, one and one-half miles, then turning south, we crossed the stream and entered the valley of Mill Creek. The river bottom here is nearly one mile wide, bounded by hills ninety to one hundred feet high. In the middle of this bottom, the same heated air, laden with similar noxious odors was found passing gently eastward up the river.

These facts were observed, but the exhausted body and sluggish brain could not give them more than a passing thought. The valley of Mill Creek, like that of Kinter's creek, a stream coming in from the south, has cut out the Silurian rock nearly one hundred feet, and a mile back from the river bottom. Jacob Unger lives in this valley, one and one-half miles south of the river. While traveling up this stream, the odor was observable, but the air appeared to be entirely still; but it was soon found that the horse was traveling as fast as the air, about four miles an hour.

While my horse was being tied to the fence, the question sprang into my mind, *per se*, apparently, "How is this? Here are three currents of air proceeding from a central point along three of the cardinal bearings of the compass;" but no answer came to this recondite question. The mind could not grasp it; the brain refused to evolve an idea concerning it. Yet, like Banquo's Ghost the question "would not down," but haunted me for years, until many of its knotty points had been unraveled. Mr. U.'s family were prescribed for and we took the Indian trail on the south side of the Wabash River, for home, and reached the desirable place at the break of day. "Labor omnia vincit."

#### AIR CURRENTS GOVERNED BY LAW.

§ 12. Were these air currents governed by law, in their movements or were they accidental? (§ 17, 33).

It was soon discovered that after the sun had set, the ravines

and narrow valleys, cooled down to the temperature of the air on the highlands, long before the larger river valley cooled; consequently a stream of cooler, denser air ran down them and seemed to underrun the warmer air in the river bottom, some time before it flowed over the brows of the hills along the river sides. Air always moves in the direction of the least resistance, and in this way heat is distributed over the face of the country and the valleys are cooled.

§ 13. The small valleys subserve the purpose of viaducts to carry cool air into the river bottom; but when an equilibrium is established, they act as a chimney to carry it and the fog back upon the high lands on both sides of the river.

§ 14. "Heat and cold," says F. M. Maury, "the early and later rains, clouds and sunshine, are not, we may depend upon it, distributed over the earth by chance. They are distributed in obedience to laws that are as certain and as sure in their operations as the seasons in their rounds."

"From the heat of summer, our winds are derived. We live at the bottom of an aerial ocean which is to a remarkable degree permeable to the sun's rays, and is but little disturbed by their direct action. But these rays when they fall upon the earth, heat its surface; the air in contact with the surface, shares its heat, is expanded and ascends into the upper regions of the atmosphere. Heat is a mode of motion."—*Tyndal*.

"The ready expansibility of air by heat gives rise to the phenomena of winds."—*Fround's Chemistry*.

§ 15. Open the door between a cool and a hot room; hold a lighted taper in the middle, the blaze stands vertical; elevate the taper, and the blaze is drawn in the cool room; lower it to the floor, and the flame is flared outward. This experiment proves that the cooler air is heavier than the warmer air. This law, imposed by the Creator Himself, on all physical substances, governs the lightest breeze as well as the hurricane and the cyclone which



mock the seaman's strength and set at naught his skill. The heated air above takes the place of the cool.

§ 16. The sun's heat in summer penetrates the earth by induction to the depth of forty to ninety feet, depending on the looseness or compactness of the soil.

The facts stated above are the results of observations made during the autumn and spring of 1843 and 1844. No attempt, as yet, had been made to demonstrate, by instruments, the truth of these theories and statements. To the observant philosopher who contemplates the agents of nature, as he sees them at work on the face of our planet, no expression uttered or act performed by them is without meaning. The heat and cold, the frost and vapor, the density and tenuity, the inertia and motion of air, each and all may be regarded as the exponent of certain physical conditions, and therefore represents the language she selects to make known her laws. To assist others to understand this language and to correctly interpret these laws is the object we now have in hand.

§ 17. In the fall of 1844, with a box of matches and a chunk of dry, rotten wood, we started out at 8 o'clock P. M. to make observations of air-currents on the hills and in the valleys of the Wabash River. The valley of Charley's Creek was first visited. [See map]. The smoke from the rotten wood was our first vane. The smoke moved toward the river, and as we were walking so as to keep it above head—the smoke ascending in a vertical column—the rate of motion could be pretty accurately determined. The current on the high lands was in the same direction. In a few minutes a fleet horse placed the vane on the south side of the Wabash River, in the valley of Treaty Creek, a mile and a half away. Here the air moved in an opposite direction, running into the valley from both sides, slowly indeed, but surely. In this I was disappointed. It had been supposed that the subtending, central current would force the air of the valley upon the hills, as explained above, but it did not do it. These observations were repeated every hour with nearly the same results, up to 11 o'clock

P. M. (§ 20). At this time the air currents stopped. The atmosphere was agitated, and within the space of three minutes, smoke from the torch moved in an opposite direction. Now it was evident that the downward current, by its density and by its dynamic force, had checked the momentum of these lateral currents and turned them in an opposite direction up the hillsides and ravines. (§ 19).

§ 18. This rough experiment was made for the reason that philosophical instruments could not be had this side of New York, yet it showed that many factors entered into these movements, and that my hypothesis was too simple to explain all these complicated forces. Finally the following outfit was procured, viz.: One mercury barometer, two thermometers, one plain and one wet bulb, four vanes (these last the writer constructed), one pocket compass, one watch, one note book, one horse, saddle and bridle, one box of lucifer matches and one lantern. The barometer could not be carried through the bushes at night and was not used. The stations visited at night were from four to six and often miles apart. From dark to daylight, the grand rounds were made every three hours. Notes were taken at each station of the time, temperature and of the direction of the winds, with the direction of the clouds, if there were any. These experiments were repeated many times every autumn for several years, with nearly the same results. The reader will have to take my statements, or otherwise repeat the experiments himself, as the space allotted to me in this volume will not contain them. The field of these discoveries is too large for any one mind to thoroughly cultivate; with the writer, the sands of life are too nearly run to prosecute this work further.

If any scientist will take hold of this subject, his knowledge and pleasure will be greatly enhanced to observe nature as she is, on a gigantic scale unfold her laws, not adverse to, but in harmony with, all her works. A few attacks of bilious fever, a few shakes of ague and the loss of many nights' sleep must not cool his ardor, for the prize is at the end of the race.

EXPLANATION—This plate (see plate 1, page 240) is made to show the movements of local currents of air in the Wabash Valley during still nights in summer and autumn.

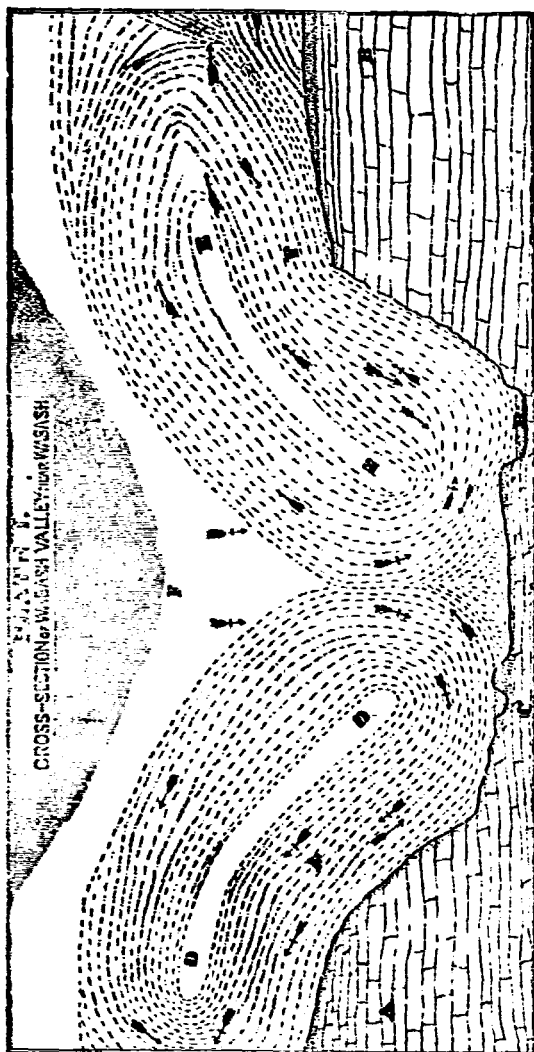
A B represents a cross section of the Wabash Valley and hills on each side of the river; also, the stratified rocks that underlie them; R, the bed of the river; C, the canal.

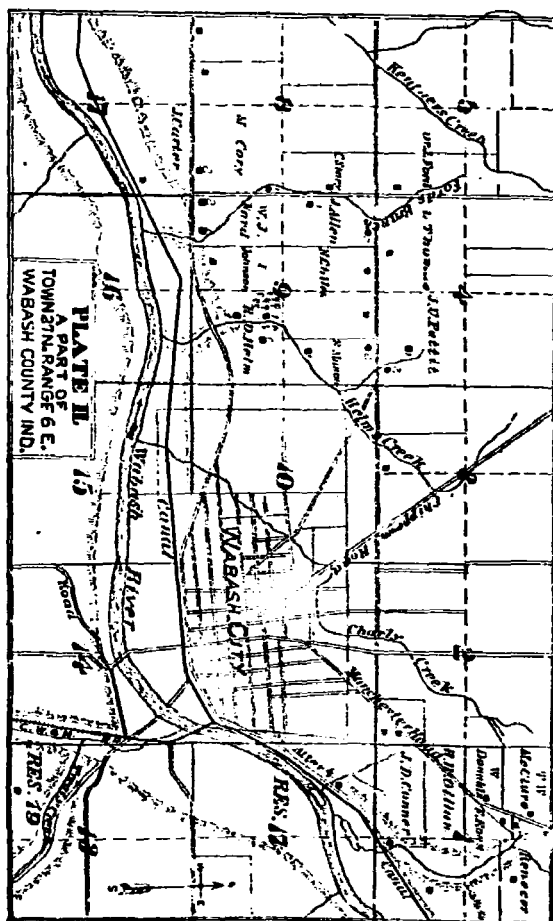
§ 19. The air on the elevated lands, in summer and fall, is cooler than the heated air of the valley, and underruns it. The heated air at the same time parts in the middle, rises and flows back on the hills, where it cools and then returns to the valley, there to be expanded by another volume of heat. Thus the two currents form great revolving cylinders, extensive as the valley is long and as wide as both valley and hills—in other words, as wide as the outflowing current extends. E E and D D represent these currents. [See arrows on plate 1].

§ 20. These movements as described above, continue until the temperature of the air on the hills is the same as that in the valley, which at this place, occurs about 11 o'clock P. M.; then they suddenly stop, when a new factor of dynamic force makes itself manifest. The shrinkage in volume of the heated atmosphere in the valley by the loss of heat causes a sag in the upper air immediately over the valleys, which gravitates until its apex fills the entire depression between the hills.

§ 21. This subtending air movement is represented in Plate 1 by the letters F F F, and the arrows with a cross. The letter F at the top represents the sag, but the arrows below show the direction the air takes after it reaches the earth in the middle of the valley. The air now in contact with the soil is heated, passes up the side streams, hollows and on to the hills, as it did in the instance before given, but it does not return from the highlands, as the descending current supplies the outflow. These movements continue until the sun in the morning, or some other disturbing cause, change them.

EXPLANATION—§ 22. Plate 2, page 241, is a map of fifteen





sections of land situated around the city of Wabash. The hills and river, the side streams and the canal, the roads and original surveys of land, are laid down. The name of the owner who occupied the land during the time these observations and experiments were in progress, is written upon it, and especially the location of his first, second and third house is given. A peculiarity in the topography of the country, shown on the east end of this map, touching the healthfulness of the locality, will be described further on.

#### ACTIVITIES CAUSED BY THE SUN.

1. § 23. We must not fail to recognize the fact that the sun, though only a private in the serried hosts of heaven, is in a material sense, so far as terrestrial affairs are concerned, almost absolutely the prime mover of the whole. Cut off his rays for a single month and all energy, whether "mechanical, chemical or vital," would cease, and the earth herself would crystalize and die.

2. § 24. Since the doctrine of the correlation of forces and the conservation of energy has been comprehended and formulated, it has been an easy task to confirm them by experiment; to trace terrestrial phenomena and the varied classes of energy, one by one, to solar origin.

3. § 25. The raising of water from rivers, lakes and seas, the building up of animal and vegetable organisms, the power of steam, the force of the zephyr, of the storm and of cyclone—are directly, or remotely, all the result of the transformation of the sun's heat into the physical energy. When the sun works, it is by undoing some previous work. If the surface of water is heated by the vertical rays of the sun, vapor flies off in the form of steam. The same power, by the agency of air, carries it on to the mountains where it is condensed into rain, and now the earth and its inhabitants drink: nature smiles—the sun has finished his work. It may be observed, however, that solar energy, while this work was in progress, completely suspended or overpowered the force of gravitation, though millions of tons of water were raised

to the top of the mountain in defiance of it, yet by its own gravity, the major part of it ran back to its original fountain.

As solar heat is the prime moving cause of all air currents, some attention must be given to the laws that govern the performance of its work.

4. § 26. Heat seeks an equilibrium in three modes: First, by conduction. This takes place only in solids. Example: Heat one end of a poker, the other end may be cold, but the heat passes up the bar from particle to particle until it produces the same temperature from end to end. The earth's surface is heated in the same manner, from the top downward, but if the ground is wet it will not descend rapidly, as explained at Section 10.

5. § 27. By convection. "This takes place only in liquids and gases. In these, every particle is in turn brought in contact with a portion of the vessel, when the heat is applied, until all have attained the same temperature."—[Pynchon.] Example: This is illustrated by boiling water in a glass tube over a lamp. Throw into the water a small amount of pulverized coloring matter that will not readily dissolve, and apply the heat. The coloring matter will soon begin to move up one side of the tube, while that on the opposite side will run down to take its place. This motion will continue in the tube until every particle in it is heated to the boiling point. The expanded liquid in the tube being lighter bulk for bulk than the cool above, rises up and gives place to the cool below. This revolving motion continues until every partical of water is brought in contact with the bottom of it. These phenomena are illustrated in nature on a large scale, in the Gulf Stream and in the Trade-winds (q. v.) as set forth under the head of Local Currents. Forty years ago very little was known concerning these questions.

6. § 28. Radiation.\* Heat seeks an equilibrium by radiation, by flying off in straight lines through space, from a hot to a cool

---

\* For the benefit of the common reader, a general outline of the mode in which heat is imparted to solids, liquids and gases is given; also the manner in which they impart it.

body. "It is clear that heat is not transmitted by conduction from particle to particle of the intervening air because the conducting power of air is extremely small."—[Pyncheon.] "It plays off from a heated body, not in a vertical column as by convection, but equally in all directions, like the radii from the center of a circle." (Idem.)

7. "Radiant heat follows the same laws as radiant light, and its velocity is the same, and they diminish as they recede from the hot body, not in proportion to the distance, but to the squares of the distance." A heated stove, for example, as every one knows, throws off its heat in every direction, from its sides bottom and top.

8. § 29. When the sun shines simultaneously on land and sea, in the warmer latitudes, the two become unequally heated. This arises from their different absorbing power. As the sun's rays pass through the water from above without obstruction, it is very little heated; thus of the two, the earth becomes much the warmer. The air over the heated earth, being expanded by heat, rises and overruns the cooler air of the sea, while at the same time the cool air of the sea underruns and takes the place of the heated land air, thus forming a revolving aerial cylinder of wide dimensions, with its axis lying parallel to the shore. These currents and counter-currents move on from morning until night. After the sun sets, by radiation, both sea and land begin to cool, the latter much more rapidly than the former. When the temperature of the earth sinks lower than that of the ocean, which it usually does early in the morning, the motion of this pneumatic cylinder is reversed, carrying the sea breeze, washed and purified in ocean's bosom back to land again. At the same time, the land breeze is whirled out, freighted with many impurities, living organisms and germs of disease, to undergo an ablution similar to the former. These agencies equalize the temperature of both earth and ocean and render districts otherwise uninhabitable, cool and healthful, and the breezes fill the sails of coasting vessels



coming in and those going out, each one half the time. Who cannot see wisdom, power and goodness here?

#### ABSORPTION, TRANSMISSION AND RADIATION OF HEAT.

9. § 30. The power of absorbing heat is in direct proportion to the power of emission.

10. Heat, too, plays an important role in air movements in the soil. The diurnal variation of temperature in the soil becomes less as the depth increases and the point at which that variation disappears changes with the capacity of the ground for conducting heat, and with the season.—[Quintlet—Prof. Forbes.] The cold of winter and the heat of summer become imperceptible, at the depth of forty to fifty feet, and neutralize each other. The sun's heat in summer, however, penetrates the earth by induction, to the depth of forty to ninety feet, depending on the moisture, the looseness or compactness of the soil.

11. While the sun remains above the horizon, the heat radiated by the surface of the earth into space, is compensated by the absorption of solar beams, but when the sun sets, and this supply ceases while the emission of heat goes on, the surface becomes cooler, until its temperature sinks below that of the air. The air in contact with the earth, of course, participates in the reduction of temperature: the aqueous vapor present speedily reaches its point of maximum density and begins to deposit moisture, whose quantity will depend upon the proportion of vapor in the atmosphere and on the extent to which the cooling process has been carried.

12. § 31. In a clear, calm night succeeding a hot day, dew is formed abundantly, when the air is holding a quantity of vapor. Simultaneously, radiation is progressing with equal rapidity. Now, if a thermometer be placed on the surface of the soil and another a few yards above it, the latter may indicate 10, 15, 20, and even 40 degrees Far., above the former, and frost may be present, but the radiating surface of the earth has not been cooled to any considerable depth.

13. § 32. "When the air in any locality acquires a higher temperature, or a higher dew point than that of the surrounding regions, it is specifically lighter, and will ascend. In ascending, it comes under less pressure and expands. In expanding from diminished pressure, it grows colder about one and a quarter degrees for every hundred yards of ascent. In cooling as low as the dew point, it will begin to condense its vapor into cloud."—(Espy), and evolve latent caloric. This evolution of latent heat will prevent the atmosphere from cooling so fast in its further ascent, and will also assist in keeping the ascending volume warmer than the atmosphere around it. Where does this ascending volume of air go, and whence comes the cold air to take its place? They are not left to chance, we may rely upon it, but they are guided by laws that compel all parts, functions and movements of nature's machinery, to move in harmony.—[§ 4, 15.]

RESIDENCES MOVED FROM SICKLY TO HEALTHY LOCALITIES BY  
MY ADVICE IN ACCORDANCE WITH THESE DISCOVERIES.

1. § 33. W. J. Ford's residence, marked No. 1 [see map], situated seventy feet above the river on dry table land, on the west half of southwest quarter of Section 9, Township 27, Range 6 east, near a deep hollow running northward from the Wabash River. From the canal, the lime rock had been worn away to a depth of thirty to forty feet, up to the road in front of his house. Here, the hollow ended, and the brook ran over the rock's surface. At this point, a fine spring of pure cold water ran out from under the rocks, which, probably, induced the owner to locate his residence here. This house was occupied from the spring of 1840 to 1844. Aside from the river bottoms, there were no sources of malaria near it. During this interval of four years, the family suffered greatly from bilious attacks, from ague and from fevers. Three children died here. The suffering, the loss of time and the expenses, taken in connection with the hardships of a new country, were too great to be endured long. I was his family

physician and his brother. My sympathies were greatly excited in his behalf, not only on account of our relationship, but I had induced him to move from Alton, Ill., to Wabash, on a promise that I would leave Connersville, Ind., and come here also, that we might spend our days together.

I had now discovered the laws governing local currents of air and had had one year's experience in (theoretically) comparing their movements about houses in healthy and sickly places. I was so thoroughly convinced that these theories were true that I advised my brother to build a new house [No. 2, see map] sixty-five rods west of the one he occupied. This site was on ground thirty feet higher, and one fourth of a mile from the Wabash River, but the lime Rock was within four feet of the surface of the earth. A well was blasted out thirty feet deep and a plentiful supply of water obtained; a new frame house was finished and his family occupied it before the next sickly season arrived. This fall (1845) passed, with the exception of a short attack of colic, without sickness. The family lived in this property a number of years and had no sickness incident to the country, and up to this day, this is as healthy a location as is found in the Wabash Valley. The first house stood, up to 1855, and many families lived in it, every occupant during the autumn having more or less sickness of a zymotic character. The number of cases of disease in the first dwelling were so much greater than that of the new, the neighbors wanted to know how the writer knew that "that was a healthy place."

2. § 34. R. D. Helm, on Helm's Creek, in Section 9, lived at No. 1, on Map. Another house stood at No. 3, occupied by a renter. H.'s family consisted of six persons. They were severely afflicted by sickness each fall, winter and spring. His physician's bill ranged from \$75 to \$100 each year. The second year he lived on this farm, two of the renter's children died. This was in 1845. He had heard that the writer was an "expert" in selecting a healthy location for a dwelling house. He came to me and said: "I am in great distress. I fear we are all going to

die off at my house. I want you to select a healthy location for me to build a house upon, and if there is none I shall leave the country." His <sup>own</sup> opportunity was not to be thrust aside. I went with him. The creek had worn away the rock, forming a valley 200 feet wide by 35 deep, with perpendicular walls, up to Helm's house, but from here up the stream ran above the rock. The house stood in line with the axis of the valley. Here, a strong, cool spring flowed out from a crevice in the rocks. This location with its environment, was very analagous to W. J. Ford's described above. At the close of this day, the air was still, the night was clear and the moon was full. We set some stumps on fire on each side of the creek. By these we could at once tell by the smoke, which way the air was moving. Presently, the air current drew into the valley and down it, toward the river. This continued until near 11 o'clock P. M., when the atmosphere was still; but, in a few minutes, the smoke flared to the north and the current was changed. In a short time, the odor from the decomposing animal and vegetable matter from the bed of the river was preceptible in the air. Shortly after this, the river valley had reached the dew point and the black fog was seen at a distance streaking up the creek. It covered both houses, barn and orchard. Everything was submerged but a low hill on the opposite side of the stream, eighteen rods west of house No. 1. As the night advanced the fog spread out laterally and covered this level table land, I know not how far, but it did not cover the hill, where the moon shone brightly all night and the noxious odor was not perceived.

These observations were kept up for several nights, at intervals. Vanes were used four feet long, suspended on fine silk thread and were very sensitive to air movements. During one particular night, the dew point was not reached, because the radiation of heat from the river valley was reflected back by clouds. These fog movements cannot be depended upon to settle these important questions; but if the temperature sinks early in the morning to the dew point, the fog is commensurate with the moving vol-

ume of air and shows accurately its length and breadth. Its margins are as well defined as those of the Gulf Stream and can be accurately traced by the eye. When fogs occur, however, they are of great-value, for they settle, not only the boundaries of air-currents but they indicate the condition of the soil over which they pass.

Mr. Helm was present when these experiments and observations were made. He was so thoroughly convinced of their correctness and truth that he immediately contracted with A. D. Meas to make and burn a kiln of brick for a new house to be located on the hill before described. This house was finished and he moved into it. A new bank barn with stone basement, and outbuildings were constructed at great expense—on “faith alone,” in my teaching. My faith had been confirmed before, by demonstration; hence I did not feel much responsibility.

What was the result of this change of location?

The answer is brief. His medical bill the first year after the change, was \$9.68; the second year \$5.37. Subsequently Helm sold his farm to Gen. John B. Rose. Rose's medical bill, the first year for a family of seven persons was \$7; the second year, \$3.25. The experience of these four years convinced me that my scientific discoveries were at open war with my pecuniary interest, but the gratification and the knowledge of having achieved a discovery of real value to our fellow-man were of more value to me than money.

§ 35. Close to Helm's first residence was a large orchard. It was a noted fact that, when the fruit was destroyed by frost or freezing throughout the neighborhood, this orchard was heavily laden with fruit; that, “when others failed, it hit”—making it very profitable to the owner. This result was obtained by the heated air and fog from the river bottom being transported into it, thus keeping away the late autumnal frosts until the young wood was fully matured and the fruit buds perfected and able to stand any degree of cold occurring in this climate. In the spring

nemon, also, the late frosts were prevented from injuring it by the warm air-currents described above.

It may be stated in this connection that the locality proper for vineyards, gardens, and early and late vegetables, may be determined in the same manner that you would fix a place for a dwelling house, with this difference, however; you would locate the vineyard, orchard or garden, where the heated air *did* accumulate, and your house where it *did not*. It is true, this would separate them, but no intelligent man would expose to danger the health of himself and family by placing his dwelling in a suitable site for these conveniences.

3. § 36. S. Mason settled at No. 1, on the east half of the northeast quarter of Section 9 (plate II), on the north bank of Helm's Creek. Here this family were all sick. Mr. and Mrs. Mason had each a severe attack of typhoid fever, lasting six weeks. This occurred in the fall of the year 1850. It was evident that the family could not live here, and another site was selected where his house now stands, at No. 2. At the time this location was made, the land was covered by a dense forest, by bushes, nettles and other weeds, and it was difficult to get through them; but its topography was learned and this selection made. Very little sickness incident to the country occurred here. After the children grew up to be men and women, one boy died from the operation of lithotomy, two girls from consumption (hereditary) and the father from heart disease; but these diseases may and do occur in any locality.

The application of these laws governing currents of air has been practical in selecting healthy sites for dwellings, and three examples are given in sufficient detail to enable the reader, with statements given above, to understand how it is done. These are deemed sufficient. In the map where the figures 1 and 2 are placed, they indicate a change in accordance with the rules before given

## AIR MOVEMENTS ON LEVEL LANDS.

§ 37. Large tracts of country, many miles in extent, are found—some treeless, some covered with timber. To the eye of the observer they appear level, yet they have their trends and systems of water courses; and, in many of them, the surface drainage is almost perfect; in others, a string of ponds or swamps may be found and the surface generally wet. No person in his senses would attempt to live in such a location as this, not even after it had been thoroughly drained and cultivated for four or five years; not till the sun's rays and the surrounding elements had wrought such chemical and mechanical changes in its surface as would destroy the development of the germs of disease; but in the former, healthy localities may be found as easily as in any other place.

§ 38. Another factor in explanation of these subjects must be considered here; it is the "water level," or line of saturation in the earth. It forms a distinct boundary between the underlying saturated soil and the ground above it, which contains water and air in variable quantities. (§ 10).

The heat of the sun's rays does not penetrate the soil below the water level. If this be near the surface, the ground is cold and wet, and all the conditions for the development of malaria are present. To live upon such soil, you may depend upon it, is to endanger health and life. In newly settled countries, as the timber is cut away, the water courses are cleared out and deepened, the water level sinks, new wells have been constructed or old ones sunk deeper, springs and brooks dry up, the hatching ponds for mosquitoes and fogs disappear. These changes may cause some inconvenience and loss, but they should be regarded as harbingers of a better sanitary condition of the country.

§ 39. "There is a great difference in soils with respect to their power to absorb and retain moisture. Scarcely any are without it, and some possess the property to a very remarkable extent."—[A. H. Buck]. Soils absorb heat in proportion to their looseness

or compactness, but chiefly by their dryness or dampness. Dry soils may absorb heat downward by conduction (§ 4) from forty to ninety feet during the summer season, but soil that is very damp, almost to saturation, absorbs heat very sparingly, for this reason: The particles of earth are fixed and almost surrounded by water and cannot readily transmit heat downward. On the other hand, heat by convection (§ 5) cannot descend, for the particles of water at the top are lighter than those below, and hence have no power to descend. Evaporation, too, carries off a large per cent. of heat, consequently these lands, as compared with dry, are always cool, damp and unhealthy. Having finished these explanations, we return to the discussion of air movements.

§ 40. After the sun sets—in a clear, still night—radiation of heat progresses equally on both wet and dry soils, as before explained. As the wet surface has but little heat to radiate, its temperature is soon reduced to the dew point, or till frost falls, the air is heavy and cold, but the dry land and the air above it are comparatively warm; the warm volume of air being lighter, ascends; at the same time, the denser volume of atmosphere over the wet land underruns it and takes its place on the dry land. Thus the warmer and cool air continue to change places until an equilibrium in temperature is formed and the upper downward current reverses it. [See Plate 1. § 27, 28, 29.] On prairies, these air movements, like the sea and land breezes, may extend over many miles, and are governed by the same forces and in the same way as those that take place among the hills and valleys.

#### PECULIAR AIR MOVEMENTS.

§ 41. The valley of Treaty Creek one mile above its mouth, is nearly fifty feet above the bed of the Wabash River, the space between the hills on either side is seventy feet deep and 300 feet wide. From this point the ravine rapidly increases in depth to 100 feet and in width to 1,000 feet. Near its mouth it turns eastward and strikes the axis of the Wabash River Valley at an angle of 80 degrees. Again, the hills on the north side of the river fall



back on the line of this angle, forming a pocket; this gives great width of bottom. Now, let the cool dense air move down the creek at the rate of two or three miles an hour, and impinge against the warm air in the river bottom moving eastward with the same velocity, the direction of both currents is changed, but the cooler forces the warm air around this *cul de sac* and upon the hills west of it carrying the fog and malaria with it, thus distributing the germs of disease in a locality otherwise healthy, on the hills and highlands for miles around. No swamp or stagnant water exists here, and all the conditions for the development of miasma, except the bed of the river itself, were wanting.

Before the timber was cut away, the same diseases obtained that do now. The people call this a "Poison Point." This idea was borrowed from the Miami Indians, who offered tobacco on a huge bowlder here to propitiate the "Great Spirit" for fear the evil genii would afflict them. The altar is gone, the offering has failed and the donor has entered the "happy hunting ground," but the genii are at their post yet, demanding their victims.

§ 42. Another peculiarity of these movements is shown in a narrow, deep ravine east of the old cemetery running northward. The pressure made against the air current ascending the river by that passing down Treaty Creek, forces the air up this ravine on the highlands northeast of the city. These lands, though 100 feet above the river, are naturally damp and lose their heat early in the evening. On these the fog from the river bottom rolls up the valley, and crosses them about 11 o'clock P. M., and it frequently runs over into the valley of Charley's Creek. This locality for the past forty-three years has had more deaths and more sickness of a grave type, in proportion to the number of inhabitants occupying it, than any place within the radius of five miles from the city of Wabash. Within the last four years, the number of cases of disease in this locality has greatly diminished, especially intermitting fevers, but the graver types, such as rheumatism, consumption, enteric and typhoid fevers still continue.

The question may be asked why cool and hot volumes of air do not mix and equalize their temperature by this method. The answer to this question is not fully settled. Oxygen is a magnetic substance, but nitrogen is dia magnetic. These two gases when mixed, twenty measures of the first to seventy-nine of the last, form our atmosphere. The difference in density of warm and cool volumes of air may change their magnetic condition. At any rate, they do not mix in nature's laboratory in this way, as is illustrated on a grand scale by the movements of the trade winds.

### PATHOTOPIA.\*

#### WHERE NOT TO BUILD A HOUSE.

§ 43. In selecting a site for a dwelling house, shun ground in which the water level is high and the soil is wet or very damp, and in which there may be a large amount of humus or decaying animal or vegetable matter, and where thorough drainage cannot be obtained. Test the water supply first. If much vegetable or animal matter is found in it, select another site. Mists and fogs are always unhealthy. Never locate at the mouth of a valley that empties into a larger one, nor upon its banks if the fogs settle there. These valleys act as venti-ducts or chimneys to carry air laden with moisture and the germs of disease to the highlands along the banks for great distances. If the prevailing winds pass over marshy lands or water where mists or fogs abound, avoid their track. Avoid damp, dark valleys and low places surrounded by hills; avoid locations where the air passing up running streams, will strike the residence. In mountainous countries, shun places where the cold winds, after a hot day, run down their slopes and cover the dwelling. The variation in temperature in winter on slopes facing to the northwest is too great for health and comfort, if it can be avoided. Neither the top nor bottom of high hills is eligible for a dwelling place; the former is too changeable, the latter too damp.

---

\* From *pathos*, disease, and *topos*, locality.

§ 44. Houses should not be erected on what is called "made-up-ground," unless thoroughly under-drained before the fill is made, especially, if it was a hollow through which the water flowed after wet spells. Rains and melting snow fill the interstices of the ground for many feet beneath the surface. This water percolates through the earth into these hollows, and carries out particle by particle of the finer constituents of the soil until a natural conduit or water way is formed; through this, the land above is relieved of its surplus water, so far as the trend is in this direction. The places are usually filled up with ashes, street cleanings, dirt from cellars, and every variety of garbage from the town or city. When this ground is filled with water, the natural outlet being blocked up, the hydraulic pressure from above forces this water through the interstices of the made-up ground, carrying out its carbonic acid and other noxious gasses, filling the air in its locality with dampness and malaria. These are dangerous locations and should never be occupied by living beings, until thoroughly drained below the filling. I will venture the opinion that such places may be traced out in cities to-day, which have not been completely under-drained, by the cases of sickness that occur alone. These negative observations are written for the rural population; in cities and towns it is only the privileged few who have the advantage of selecting sites for new houses.

#### HYGETOPIA.\*

##### WHERE TO BUILD A HOUSE.

§ 45. Select an elevated situation where the water is pure, and does not rise and fall by accessions of surface water after hard rains, and where its level does not range above fifteen feet below the surface; where the drainage is or may be made perfect; where the air is fine and pure and not contaminated by emanations from the soil; where the sun's rays are not obstructed by high hills or forest trees. Fear not his rays, for by them all animated nature

---

\*Hygetopia, a healthy locality. From Hygieia, healthy, and topos, place.

lives, moves and grows. Select a soil, if possible, not too retentive of moisture; but a dry, gravelly, sandy loam or limestone formation, compact clay or clay with gravel, and a low water level with thorough drainage, makes a commendable site. A bench, part way up a hill, not near a break or hollow in it, facing the southeast, south or southwest, other things being equal, makes a very pleasant place for a dwelling house on such formations.

§ 46. On level lands, it is needful to proceed with more circumspection. It is necessary, not only to make accurate observations on air currents, but the thermometer must be used to settle these important questions. Dig or bore down from one to three feet, in several places, on dry as well as on damp grounds; take the temperature at the bottom and top of all excavations, and then compare them. The soil that will carry the largest amount of heat the lowest down, in a given time, is, in the main, the driest. A soil that will not conduct the sun's heat downward is unfit to live upon, it is too damp and too wet.

#### OTHER FACTS ILLUSTRATIVE OF AIR CURRENTS.

§ 47. Late in the fall of 1862, the Army of the Southwest camped near the town of Patterson, Reynolds County, Mo., on a plateau with hills south and north of it. The smoke from our camp fires divided in the middle and ascended these hills. The fall rains had commenced and the camp was muddy, but the night was cold and the mud was frozen—where it was not too deep—hard enough to bear a horse; yet, on these hills, tender vegetation was green and gave no signs of frost. By 11 o'clock each night the sky overhead was clear, but the hills were covered by a canopy of smoke.

§ 48. We were camped on Jack's Fork of Current River, in Shannon County, Mo. Here all the native physicians had left with the Confederate army. It was in the fall of the year. The country was mountainous, with scanty vegetation, dry and barren, but the people were sick without any apparent cause. Their dis-

cases were of a grave type. The prominent features were these : Mind sluggish, skin cool and clammy, pulse too slow and weak, tongue heavily coated and brown in the middle, breath foul, some enlargement in the region of the liver, tenderness over the head of the colon, and vitality low. The system seemed to be overwhelmed with some narcotic poison. No re-action took place, the patient died. When asked for a cause of this sickness in the sterile region, the people said : " In the fall, when the winds come from Black River Swamps, a great many people get sick and die; the doctors can't do much for it." " How far are these swamps from here?" " Fourteen miles." " How do you know it comes from these swamps?" With a look of surprise, the answer came: " Why, can't you smell the cypress?" Sure enough, the odor of cypress was in the air. Cypress grew in the swamps of Black River, but not on Currant River. This case is cited to show how far miasma may be carried by air currents, and to warn persons intending to locate sites for houses, towns or cities, not to place them in the line of prevalent winds that pass over swamps, though many miles away.

§ 49. Surely the founders of Washington City knew nothing about hygiene, or they would not have located it at a bend of the river, where the atmosphere, passing up the Potomac, sweeps through a large portion of the city. There is, also, an almost irreclaimable swamp adding its pestilential germs to the already contaminated breezes that pass over it. The White House is in the line of these insalubrious air currents and should not be occupied by the " Nation's Chief" during the sickly season.

§ 50. These air movements have been seen a great many times in the Wabash Valley, when the people were clearing the land and burning the brush and logs on it, the smoke from the burning timber ascending upon the hills on each side of the river. These phenomena did not always occur. If the wind or a moderate breeze came from the south or southwest, the heat and smoke were wafted to the north or northwest. It was further observed

that when the clouds ran low in the evening and the air was still in the valley, these revolving air currents (§ 4, 5) did not occur, but the valley cooled by radiation down to the dew point, and the fog filled it from hill-top to hill-top until the sun in the morning resolved it into air. In this case the wind was too near the earth for the descending current to move with sufficient force to set in motion the elements below. These phenomena occasionally occur, also of clear nights, probably from the same cause.

I failed to mention another factor connected with these revolving air currents or machine, if I may be allowed to use the name, described more or less through these pages; it is this: This machine, without disturbing any other motion or movement, travels up the Wabash Valley at the rate of two or three miles an hour, and for the space of forty years I never saw it move in an opposite direction.

#### AIR CURRENTS IN THE EARTH.

§ 51. This treatise would be imperfect without a description of "ground air-movements."

"The atmosphere penetrates the earth and circulates beneath its surface to an indefinite depth."—[William Ford]. To the scientist, to say nothing of the scientific agriculturist, this is a very important study, involving (1) a "knowledge of the constitution of soil; (2). pollution of soil; (3). and diseases induced by conditions of soil." The study of the constituents of the soil belongs to the domain of chemistry, and cannot be described in this article only so far as it has a direct bearing on sanitation through the medium of ground air and pollution of soil.

§ 52. What is understood by soil in the following sketch consists of clay, sand and gravel intermingled with animal and vegetable substances, including water, ammonia and several gases, not including rock formations, but such as are used for agricultural purposes, wet lands and swamps. The air circulates through the ground down to the water level (§ 39).

The amount of air in the soil is apt to be under-estimated. "Loose sand and gravel contain fifty per cent; moderately pulverized soil, twenty-five per cent, and loose soil turned up for agricultural purposes may contain from two to ten times its volume of air."—[Parks.]. Gases usually found in the soil will be mentioned in the order in which they are found in the greatest quantity, namely, nitrogen, oxygen, carbonic acid gas and hydrogen. All of these gases when taken into the system of man in moderate quantities produce no deleterious effect, but carbonic acid gas breathed into the lungs is a deadly poison. It is what is known as well damp. Any locality where this gas is extensively generated in the soil is regarded as unhealthy. The forces that act on the air in the earth are winds that pass over it, heat by expansion, cold by contraction, rains and melting snows.

§ 53. Air being 770 times lighter than water, can go where it can go. Bear this statement in mind and reflect upon it. Pettenkofer has demonstrated the facility with which air passes through compact soils, through brick, through mortar and through plastered walls. Example—A leak sprung in a gas pipe under one of our streets a few days ago. The gas passed from it through the soil a distance of 600 feet and filled a citizen's cellar, well and cistern. The leak was stopped and the nuisance disappeared. Let the wind move briskly in the line of a tile drain, twenty rods long and laid four feet deep with the windward end closed. Then the wind will rush out of the open end strong enough to put out a light or move light bodies. In this case the superincumbent air, by its pressure on the surface of the ground forces the air below the soil in the same direction. Hibernating animals could not live in the earth if the air did not circulate through it. In the winter season, the earth cools down to about 41 degrees Fah. below the frozen crust, and its interstices are filled with cold, dense air. In the summer season, it is heated down from forty to ninety feet by the sun's rays. This dense air expands by heat and rushes out, carrying with it all the gases and germs of disease that may have been generated in it through the winter.

Thus it inhales to repletion in winter and exhales in summer, yet it has a diurnal respiration, caused by the same force and in the same manner but in less degree.[§ 39].

§ 54. Rains and melting snows fill the earth's surface with water, and, unless they fall in great abundance, the earth is not filled with them down to the water level [§ 38]; then, as the water sinks by its own weight, the air below is forced out, and that above followed by its own gravity. Every heavy shower repeats this movement in the soil.

§ 55. Rain water, though almost pure, contains a small per cent of ammonia and carbonic acid,<sup>2</sup> but when it strikes in the earth it dissolves out, from decaying substances on the earth's surface, an amount of animal and vegetable matter, which it carries down with it. It is upon these extracted matters that aquatic insects live: their presence is a sure indication of contamination. This water is not potable—it pollutes the air above it.

§ 56. It is an acknowledged fact that a tile drain, well laid, four feet deep, will carry off water from a strip of ground, fifty feet wide on each side of it. Now suppose the house well be fifty feet deep, the water trend would be, on all sides, 300 feet—600 in diameter. The dwelling house is always near it, and on farms, the cattle yard, the stable, the hog-pen, and above all that most abominable and unmanageable of all nuisances—the privy—are within 100 to 200 feet of the well and house. And, suppose further, that the soil around the building is polluted by slops and garbage from the kitchen, in what condition would you expect to find the water in the well, and the air in the ground around it? *Polluted, of course. The former unfit to drink; the latter unfit to breathe.* This is not an overdrawn picture. I have said nothing about the condition of the cellar, about ventilation, and about poisonous gases, from sources indicated above. Air and water are grouped together here, because the water carries the filth into the earth and contaminates the air above it.

§ 57. In cold weather, when the dwelling is heated, the air inside being lighter than that under it, runs up through the floor



and around the walls. This movement is caused by the pressure of the cold atmosphere outside forcing the ground air under the walls of the house to take the place of the air inside. These air movements continue as long as the heat is kept up inside. The reader should recollect that if the water level is high, the air coming in from below will be loaded with moisture, and all textile fabrics may be damp and mouldy (§ 32).

§ 58. Dampness is the exciting cause of colds, bronchitis, rheumatism, consumption, and, doubtless, many other diseases. *Polluted air and water* give rise to a large class of maladies known as "filth diseases," too numerous to name, but typhoid fever and diphtheria are specimens of them [§ 38].

The mass of people know little or nothing about the first principles of hygiene. To them it is a sealed book; they have no means of gaining knowledge in this direction. Physicians as a body, are not learned in this science, and are too busy to impart knowledge to their patrons. The daily and weekly press have adequate facilities for disseminating this kind of knowledge among the people; but, they, too, like the physicians, are not skilled in this department of science. These pages are written to remedy this defect, so far as they go, and to impart some knowledge of air movements not before known. If any person is disposed to object or to criticise any statement made by me, in these pages, I hope he will do me the honor, not only to show wherein I am in error, but give me the truth, or, at least, something better in the place of it.—"*Save the wheat but burn the darnel.*"

## ADDENDA.

### TRADE WINDS.

"Observer" asks for an example in nature on an extended scale in support of your [my] theory of local currents; several have been given but we will gratify "Observer" with one, the truth of which, we think, he will not call in question.

Trade winds: "When the part of the earth's surface which is

heated is a whole zone, as in case of the tropics, a wind will set in towards the heated tropical zone from both sides and uniting, will ascend, and then separating, flow as upper currents in entirely opposite directions. Hence the surface current will flow from the higher latitudes towards the equator and an upper current toward the poles. If then the earth was at rest, a north wind would prevail in the northern half of the globe, and a south wind in the southern half. But these directions are modified by the motions of the earth on its axis from east to west. In virtue of this action objects on the earth's surface at the equator are carried east at the rate of 17 miles a minute, but as we recede from the equator its velocity is continually diminished; at 60 degrees it is only  $8\frac{1}{2}$  miles a minute, or half the velocity of the equator and at the poles it is nothing.

For further knowledge of these forces that modify these air currents may be found in Chambers' Encyclopedia under the word "wind."

It is not necessary for our purpose to give further explanations.

There is a belt four or five degrees wide parallel to the equator extending around the earth known as the "region of calms." It marks the meeting time of the north and south trade winds when they mutually neutralize each other. The north trades prevail between the 9th and 26th degrees, and the south between the fourth degree north and the twenty-second degree south. On the north side of the equator there is a zone or belt 17 degrees wide, equal to 1,173 miles, extending entirely around the earth. It is established by observation that there is within the tropics a cool surface-wind flowing toward the belt of calms, and at the same time there is a heated overflow current blowing towards the north pole: thus cooling the tropical regions and warming the northern. Similar movements are found on the south side of the belt of calms that obtain on the north side. (See paragraph § 19 above). Thus these vast air currents form two revolving cylinders about

24,000 miles long and 49 degrees—3,381 geographical miles wide.

“Observer” may object and say that this is not a parallel case; “there is no subtending current.”

True. In this case there is no loss of temperature in the belt of calms; it is maintained the same the year around; but in the case mentioned at paragraph § 20, 21 *super*, there is a loss of heat and a shrinkage in the volume of air which induces the super-incumbent air to settle down and fill the valley. Nothing of this kind prevails in the tropics.

## ALKALIES IN BREAD.

A CAUSE OF CHANGE IN TYPE OF FEVER, AND OTHER PATHOLOGICAL CONDITIONS.

By JAMES FORD, M. D., Member of Medical Society of Indiana,  
Ex-Surgeon 8th Indiana Infantry; U. S. Surgeon for  
Pension Bureau. Read before the Wabash  
County Society, October 28th, 1875.

Inflammatory fevers of 100 years ago did not present phenomena in many respects like those of to-day. Then, the febrile action ran higher, consequently the fever terminated sooner in resolution or disolution. Now they, yet *sthenic*, approach the *asthenic* type. The fever is lower, morbid, changes less rapid, and, if left to run its course, the termination is generally more favorable. The former required heroic antiphlogistic treatment, blood letting, emetics, alteratives and diaphoretics; the latter scarcely ever required venesection or emetics; alteratives, diaphoretics and tonics, meet all the indications.

Other physical changes have occurred within the period above stated, not only in the character of the diseases, but in their frequency also. Among these may be mentioned, kidney diseases, heart disease, decay of the teeth, uterine engorgements, dimin-

ished lactation, consumption and scrofula, together with all that train of morbid symptoms arising from poor blood, spanæmia.

From this statement of facts, which, we think, no one will deny, the question arises, Why this change? Has the physical organization deteriorated, or does it arise from telluric causes, over which we have no control, or may it not arise from substances which impoverish the blood, when taken into the economy mixed with the food we eat?

We will not advance any theory touching all these questions, but will confine our remarks principally to substances taken into the circulation from the bread we eat, which change the protean compounds into uria and uric acids.

It is certain that wheat bread has been, at least, a part of the food of man for 6,000 years; "leavened bread and unleavened bread" are mentioned in the earliest records that have descended to us. This was a wholesome, nutritious bread. Fifty years ago our mothers learned from some source, that "potash," as it was then called, if dissolved in sour milk and immediately mixed with wheat flour, would puff up the dough of which they made light bread. The cause of this they did not know; the effect of this compound on the digestion and the economy generally they cared not to ask. A few years later the whiskey makers of New England learned that by suspending potash over the fermenting grain in the beer tubs its "raising qualities" were much improved; this salt they called "salaratus." A part of the potash subjected to this process absorbed another equivalent of carbonic acid, generated by the fermenting "mash," then, it was a mixture of carbonate and bicarbonate. This impure salt was put up in pound packages, with printed directions as to how it should be used, and sold all over the country for years afterward. Of late years other alkalies and other salts have been brought into use. Of these the bicarbonates of soda, bitartrate of potash (cream of tartar) and salaratus (bicarbonate of potash) are much used in the raising of biscuit. The common alum (alumina et potassa sulphas) has been extensively used, not for the purpose of making the

bread light, but to make it heavier, whiter and tougher, and if the flour is bad, to give it a better appearance.—Here, then, we have four alkaline substances entering into our daily food in sufficient quantities, we think, to materially injure the health and constitution.

Here we must let this branch of the subject rest until we shall have examined the protein compounds, namely, albumen, fibrin, and caseine.

#### ALBUMEN.—COMPOSITION C<sub>400</sub>. H<sub>310</sub>. N<sub>50</sub>. O<sub>120</sub>. S<sub>2</sub>. P.

Albumen is a clear fluid, and one of the most important of the constituents of the blood, and is present in larger quantity than any of the other solid matters contained in it. It exists in a state of solution in the serum and constitutes about 7 per cent. of the entire mass of the blood. If the proportion of albumen, in a state of health, ranges from 70 to 75 parts in 1,000, in disease, as in cholera, it accumulates to 131, but in Bright's disease, it sinks as low as 55 in 1,000.

*Effect of bases on albumen.*—The presence of an alkali in liquids (Dr. W. A. Miller) containing albumen considerably modifies the reactions; if the alkali be present in large quantity the solution does not coagulate when heated. Again, albumen forms definite compounds with the alkalies, and their metallic oxides. Coagulated albumen is dissolved freely by the solutions of the alkalies, and, according to Lieberkuhn, it retains 5.4 per cent. of potash, which holds it in solution. This solution of potassic albuminate, is not coagulated by boiling it in water. Sodic albuminate resembles the potassic compound and may be formed in a similar manner. Thus it appears that the alkalies, potash and soda, dissolve fibrin in the tissues or out of them.

Albumen, though not a vital fluid, is the original "*Pabulum*" from which all solids are generated, affording the *material* for the production of the fibrin, the globulin and the hæmatin of the blood, yet, of itself, it has no formative capacity. Fibrin, then, is

built into the tissues by their own inherent power of transforming and appropriating it.

### FIBRIN.

Muscular fiber is chiefly composed of fibrin, and is closely allied, in its chemical composition and general properties, to Albumen. Albumen and fibrin, in their chemical relations, and we may also mention caseine, seems to be modifications of the same substance.

Fibrin contains more oxygen and nitrogen than albumen; as the following table will show. In 100 parts of fibrin we find :

	Albumen.	Fibrin.	Caseine.
Nitrogen . . . .	16.48.	17.21.	55.72.
Oxygen . . . .	18.27.	19.35.	21.55.

Thus it will be seen that albumen, by an increase of oxygen, is changed into fibrin, and fibrin by an additional increase of oxygen, is changed into caseine. Of the substances that accelerate the metamorphosis of the tissues,\* and thus augment the solids of the urine, the alkalies and their carbonates are those whose action is the best known; these (with such of their salts as are formed by the acids which are decomposed in the blood into the carbonic, such as the acetates, tartrates, and citrates), have powerful solvent action on the albuminous compounds generally, and tend to break up those compounds into similar forms of combination. Hence, they tend to hasten the retrograde metamorphosis of the tissues; their chemical force being exerted, not merely on those which are already in a state of disintegration, but also on those which, being disposed to degenerate, *cannot exercise that resisting power*† which they possess, when in a state of complete vital activity.

Dr. Parks has given satisfactory evidence that it causes an increase in the solids of the urine generally, but especially in the urea and in the amount of sulphuric and phosphoric acids; thus

\*Carpenter's Physiology, Page 400.

†Ibid.

clearly showing that it hastens the metamorphosis of some of the albuminous structures of the body. The increase was more marked, says this author, in cases of *chronic diseases than in ordinary health*. In a case of Eczema, Dr. Parks gave liquor pottassæ with this result. The solids were increased from 660.1 to 689.6, Urea 371.5 to 454.5, sulphuric acid 29.2 to 33.6, Phosphoric acid 10.6 to 15.4; and in a case of Phthisis, with Liq. Pot. the solids were increased from 608.2 to 781.7, Urea 368.8 to 408.8, Sulphuric acid 18.6 to 20.9, Phosphoric acid 9.9 to 14.5. A similar table has been given by Golding Bird.

It was the boast of our grandfathers that they lived to a good old age with all or nearly all of their teeth *in situ* and sound; but how is it now? Sound teeth are the exception, and decayed teeth or no teeth at all, is the rule. Artificial teeth, shining in the mouths of men in the prime of life, and young ladies in their teens, are a kind of dental logic, which needs only to be stated to carry conviction that there is something wrong, an *error loci* at least, in the mouth, if not in the system at large.

It may be asked why the teeth decay and not other bones as well? The answer is, other bones do become necrosed from the same causes. The answer of one question will be the answer of both.

Every organ has its morphic and metamorphic, its tearing down and building up process, so to speak, peculiar to itself. We have most marvelous exemplification of design, which the vital economy of the body presents in no less a degree than its organized structure; an explication of power more marvelous, when it is shown that, not only every kind of tissue, but every spot of every organ has its own special pabulum, drawing something from the blood, which is different from that appropriated by every other part of the body, save the corresponding spot on the opposite side. This position seems fully established by the researches of Dr. W. Budd, and of Mr. Paget, on symmetrical diseases.

The conclusion seems unavoidable, "that, however closely one

portion of skin or bone may seem to resemble another, the only parts that are *exactly* alike are those which repeat each other symmetrically on opposite sides of the body: for, although no power or artificial chemistry may determine the difference, the chemistry of the living body makes it evident, the morbid material testing-out the parts for which it has the greatest affinity uniting with those alone and passing by the rest." Thus the *syphilitic poison has its seats of election, which it brings to attack the bone, fixing on certain parts of the tibiae and of the skull with great uniformity.* This law obtains, also, in the *decay of the teeth.* If, for example, the second molar tooth, on the right side of the upper jaw, is carious, the corresponding tooth, *ceteris paribus*, will be found diseased also. Thus each tissue, taking from the blood the food it needs, it becomes an excretory organ; and removes from the blood that which, if left in it, would be injurious to the nutrition of the body generally. Thus the phosphates, which are deposited in the teeth and bones, are as effectually excreted from the blood, and as completely prevented from acting injuriously on the other tissues, as are those which are discharged in the urine. But suppose we introduce some chemical agent into the circulating mass that interferes with this nice discriminating power, so to speak, of these excreting tissues, not only from meal to meal, but from year to year, from the cradle to the grave: let the following table show.

In explanation of this table, it may be necessary to state that the writer called on eight respectable ladies who had no small children, and requested them to give him as much baking powder as they used for one meal, and the number of each of their families. This powder was invariably measured out with a spoon, and put in a package with the number of persons in a family, and the donor's name inscribed upon it. These parcels were weighed and the contents given us in the table on next page :



## SALTS USED IN BREAD AT ONE MEAL.

Name of Salt.	Soda.	Bitartrate Potasse.	Baking Powder.	No. of Family.	Weight in grains	Weight for each.	Total Gra.
1. Soda Blend....	Soda	Bitart Pot	.....	4	61	15½	45½
2. Cream Tartar....	Soda	Bitart Pot	.....	4	122	30½	31
3. Baking Powder....	Soda	.....	tart acid	4	135	60	60
4. Soda....	Soda	.....	.....	3	240	20	60
5. Cream Tartar....	Soda	Bitart Pot	.....	3	120	40	30½
6. Baking Powder....	Soda	.....	tart acid	3	91	63	63
7. Soda....	Soda	.....	tart acid	5	314	10½	21
8. Milk Sour....	Soda	.....	lact. a'd	6	60	21	21
9. Baking Powder....	Soda	.....	tart acid	3	62	.....	.....
Total	.....	.....	.....	39	1,265	*32.4	.....

\*Average for each individual.

The following conclusions may be deduced from the foregoing premises:

1st. All alkalies taken into the system in excess of the normal supply, which the food is supposed to furnish, are *deleterious* to health.

2nd. Alkalies, when in the blood in excess, increase the capacity of Albumen for oxygen.

3rd. Albumen, Fibrin and Caseine are dissolved and held in solution by the alkalies and their carbonates.

3th. These alkalies are *Blood Alterants and Diuretics*, and have the power, if taken before meals, of reducing Obesity.

5th. When continued, the Albumen of the blood and of the tissues become oxidized: its sulphur under the form of sulphuric acid, unites with the alkali, and probably with the changed protein compound, and is eliminated by the kidneys: and "induce (Warring) *Cachetic* condition of the system."

6th. They act as slow poison, impair the plasticity of the blood, and destroy or cause the nutritive elements to be eliminated without properly supplying the waste in the tissue.

7th. I submit, in view of all these considerations, the above enumerated causes are not sufficient to account for this change of type in fevers, this terrible gangrene of the teeth, this diminished secretion of milk in the female, this strumous diathesis, and all

that class of diseases arising from an impoverished condition of the fluids and solids of the body.

#### ADDENDA.

The above article, "Alkalies in Bread," was written fourteen years ago, and has had the effect of calling the attention of scientists to this subject.

Another alkali is extensively used as a raising material in the formation of the various kinds of cakes and cookies in which sugar and eggs enter in the compound: it is the carbonate of ammonia; its chemical formula is  $N. H. 4$  plus  $O. H.$  Lay a small parcel of this salt on a knife-blade or on a strip of sheet iron and hold it over a lamp for a few minutes and it is all decomposed or vaporized, no residue being left. Treat any of the baking powders in the same way and after the carbonic acid gas is driven off, the soda or potash is left, even a white heat will not volatilize them—these are the poisons that enter the system through the stomach and impoverish the blood and impair the general health as shown above.

Therefore carbonate of ammonia is the only material, except yeast, used by scientific bakers, for the reason that heat dispells or vaporizes it, having none of it in the bread. Bread thus made is a pure, sweet, wholesome food.

Call on your baker and he will inform you how to use the ammonia.

In conclusion I desire to say that hop yeast, when it can be conveniently used, is the best ferment known.

## THE ACOUSTIC PROPERTIES OF PUBLIC HALLS.— CAN THEY BE IMPROVED.

BY JAMES FORD, M. D.

It is not the object of the writer to give a learned dissertation on the laws of "Acoustics," only so far as it is necessary to explain the movements and effects of sound-waves in court rooms, legislative halls, churches, etc.

Sound is a sensation, and is produced by waves or pulses of air, and when they come against the wall they are reflected off in straight lines at the same angle of the incident rays\*, *i. e.*, if the sound of an organ-pipe impinges a straight wall at an angle of 40 degrees, the echo or reflected sound will fly off at the same angle; if it strikes at an angle of ninety degrees, the echo will return to the pipe that made it, unless the undulations, going and coming (being of equal length and intensity), shall neutralize each other, then no sound is emitted—none heard. Sound is not propagated in a vacuum, and can only be heard when there is an elastic vibrating medium, as air, between the sounding body and the ear.

The distance of the reflecting surface must be far enough away to allow sufficient time to elapse between the sound wave and the return echo, for the ear to distinguish them. This is about one-tenth of a second, "so that if we assume 118 feet as the distance traversed by sound in a second, 124 of 1118, or 62 feet [62x2 equals 124] will be the least distance at which an echo can be heard, as sound will go that distance and return in one-ninth of a second; if the distance is less, the echo only clouds the original sound, but is not heard distinctly." These indistinct echoes interfere and produce those rumbling, roaring noises so often heard in public halls.

The velocity of all sounds, grave or sharp, strong or feeble, and of any length, passing through homogeneous bodies, is supposed•

---

\*The reflection of sound is governed by the same law that the reflection of light is. The reflected sound is the echo.

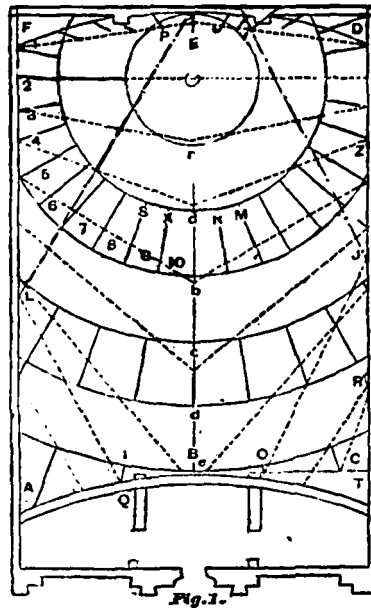
to be equal. When sounds are reflected off at right angles, and meet on diagonal lines, their intensity or amplitude is increased proportionately; also with these, the echoes from the side walls meet along a central line and clash in confusion. This may be illustrated by throwing a handful of pebbles into placid water. Each pebble becomes the center of concentric diverging waves; some strike waves of equal velocity and intensity—then the force of both is instantly converted into heat and is lost; and others impinge at all conceivable angles and break up in a confused ripple.

Similar movements take place in square audience-rooms. Under these conditions no distinct musical note—no distinct word is heard—nothing but a noise. Rooms with high or vaulted ceilings are objectionable, for at an altitude of 26 feet—for this point is the limit of perceptibility—the reflection and the voice will blend together and strengthen the voice of the speaker; but, if higher than this, the direct sound and the echo will be heard separately, and cause indistinctness. Audience rooms should be so constructed as to convey uttered sounds throughout the space occupied by the audience, unimpaired by any echo or conflicting sound. (Sillim's Physics.)

The principal evil to be avoided is confusion and repetition of the echoes: it is less important to provide for concentration of sounds of the speaker's voice than for the suppression of all echoes. A difference between direct and repeated sounds of from 15 to 22 feet does not disturb, and may even assist hearing; a difference of from 185 to 215 feet may be disregarded because of the feebleness of the echo; the distance of 30 feet is to be avoided as being the most annoying. (American Cyclopedia.)

The principles of acoustics are well known in theory but are seldom carried out to a satisfactory result in practice. Many costly assembly halls and churches are defective as regards public speaking. In many cases the sounds uttered cause echoes and reverberations preplexing alike to speaker and auditory, and

in others the same sounds are dispersed at a high elevation and are lost. This subject urgently demands consideration in connection with architecture.



DESCRIPTION OF PLATES.

Let A, B, C, D, E, F, Fig. 1 represent an audience room 60 feet long by 47 feet wide in the clear, divided by a central line B E; the right side, A, B, E, F, is represented by a segment of a circle, back and front; the radius of the first is 65 feet long, the second is 60 feet long. The reading desk is placed at E, eight feet from the back wall. From the point E, circular lines r, a, b, c, d, e, are drawn, representing sound-waves flowing off from the speaker E; from this point also, diverging lines, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, etc., are projected to the wall ten degrees apart. These diverging lines represent the incident rays; at the point they reach the

walls, a spaced line is projected off at the same angle that the incident ray bears to the wall, some of which meet along the the central line E. B, at r, a, b, c, etc.: these are called the reflected or echo waves. There is another called the re-echo, represented in the drawing as a spaced dotted line: it obeys the same law as do the incident and reflected rays.

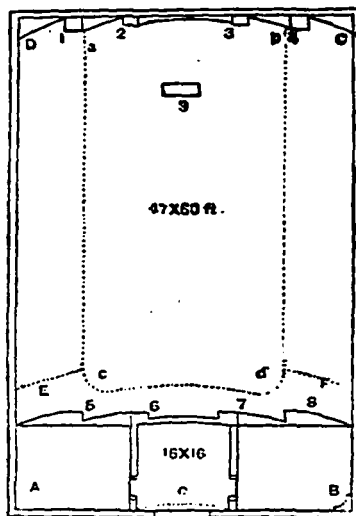


Fig. 2.

Now compare the echo lines that impinge against the straight-end walls of the right side with those that strike the back and front circular walls of the left side: then it will appear that the angles of reflection will greatly differ—that the echo-waves will accumulate in a square room along the line E B and along the diagonals B, J and T, b not shown in the cut, with such intensity that the acoustic properties of the room will be greatly impaired; but contra, the echo waves reflected from the circular walls, A, B, E, F, are so completely dispersed or diffused, that they do not interfere with the direct sound-wave emanating from the speaker: consequently the echoes cannot interfere.

[The drawings are made to suit the columns of the *Christian Standard*, and are too small to represent the echoes from the rear end of the building.]

Fig. 2. This represents an audience room 47x60 feet square. It is drawn on the same general principles that obtain in figure 1; but the treatment of the front and rear walls is different. The radius of the circle C D is 60 feet, and E F 65 feet.

The projections, 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5, 6, 7, 8, represent pilasters projecting from the inner face of the end walls; the circle D F of Fig. 1 is broken up into short segments which extend from one pilaster to the other, as shown in the cut. The face of these pilasters may take the same angles the segments take.

This arrangement of members leaves the contour of walls in a straight line and saves room. The pilasters may be finished with base and capital, and be made very ornamental at little cost.

All square corners should be curved around ceilings and in perpendicular corners above the gallery. If there be a gallery in front or opposite to the speaker's stand, the walls above it should be built as represented a A o B with curved corners, but the curve a should have the same radius of the line 6 and 7; also the front, c d, (dotted lines) may be carried to the back wall a b, or reflected back at E, c and d, E, if side galleries be not desired.

In determining the size and proportion of an audience-room, many abstruse questions present difficulties hitherto unsettled; but it is hoped that the following proportions, statements and suggestions already made, will, at least, approximate the truth.

After examining both Congressional halls, many state capitols, churches, court rooms, etc., in the last twenty years, the writer has reached the following conclusions, viz :

1. An audience room should be made from one-fourth, and in no case to exceed one-third longer than wide, or as 40 is to 53 feet. This proportion does not include the entrance hall.

The ceiling should be one-half the width in height, but in no instance should it be higher than 25 or 26 feet, for above this al-

titude the echo would return, and the last word spoken would be audibly repeated.

In the year 1864, the writer drew up the plan and specifications of the Christian church building in the city of Wabash, Indiana, but the structure was not completed until 1866. The letters A, T D F, Fig. 1, represents the shape of the audience-room; it is 47 by 60 feet in the clear; the ceiling is 23 feet high. The gallery extends over the entrance hall, increasing the length of the room to 72 feet. The details of finish inside are like those described above.

The acoustic properties of this church are regarded as "complete." "a grand success." "perfect." "nothing more to be desired."

Query : Can not this audience-room be duplicated indefinitely? I think it can.

I have already reached the limits of a newspaper article, and my remarks are necessarily fragmentary and suggestive. If any thing more is needed, I will try to supply it.



## APPENDIX NO. I.

## THE UNWRITTEN HISTORY OF THE FORD FAMILY.—UT FAMA TRADITUM EST.

## THE NAME.

The name Ford is derived from the Anglo Saxon word "Hlaford;" "Hlaf," loaf or bread and "Ord," to supply, to give out, literally, bread giver. The word was then contracted and written "Lavord, and lastly Lord and Ford, to supply." When Christianity was introduced among these people in the fifth or sixth century, they had no name for the Creator; they were told, probably by St. Patrick, he gave them bread; "Hlaford" was then adopted.

(See Dr. Adam Clark on the word Lord; Genesis Chap. 3, Ver. 13; also Library of Useful Knowledge. V. 9, P, 157.)

Here is a bit of history I give with baited breath, yet it may be true:

## HISTORY OF THE FOUR MASTERS.

Bishop Hogan, (Catholic), of Kansas City, Missouri, gave Dr. J. M. Ford the origin and analysis of the word Ford. It made a strong impression on him at the time and he informed me of it. Desiring to know more about it, he was requested to get a statement in writing, which he did, but not from the good Bishop, for he was not at home, but from Con Malony, whom he calls the "Irish Linguist," who wrote the following from his copy of the "Four Masters," which contains the genealogy of the Irish Chiefs furnished me by the kindness of the Irish Linguist, a resident of Kansas City, Missouri.

## HISTORY.

“Six hundred years before Christ. Militus, king of Spain, whose name in Celtic was Meleag, subdued Ireland: he was accompanied by a Danish Prince, who was known by the Celts as O Cosnonha (pronounced O Cosnova), the Celtic meaning of which is “The Ford,” or “Crossing.” Militus, (Latin) king of Spain, made O Cosnanha prince and ruler of Ireland. In time O Cosnanha was joined by numbers of Danes, who, after many centuries, were driven from Ireland and Scotland, throughout England, Wales and Denmark. Many remained in Ireland: those who settled in England among the Anglo-Saxons, soon anglicized the name O Cosnanha to the noun Ford or Crossing.

From O Cosnanha, whose descendants remained in Ireland, sprang all of the names McGee, McAnarneys, etc.

(The writer learned From Dr. J. M. Ford, that the “Book of the four Masters,” was written in the Danish language and never was put in print nor translated into the English tongue, and yet remains in manuscript.)

I give you the above in a very condensed form but it is authentic.

October, 17, 1889.

J. M. FORD.

## TRADITIONAL HISTORY CONTINUED.

About the year 1675: two brothers emigrated from Ireland—said to be Scotch Irish, (Celtic), and landed at or near Jamestown in the Crown Colony of England, now Old Virginia.

The elder brother was known as BEN FORD—born about 1653: and settled near Jamestown and raised a family, then the younger brother, EZEKIEL FORD—born probably in 1655, emigrated to Port Tobacco and made it his home. Owing, doubtless, to the scarcity of women, he did not marry till he was forty-one years old, 1696. He had, it is stated, four sons and one daughter, viz: Nicholas Ford, for whom my oldest brother was named, was a farmer, owned land and slaves and was an active patriot

in those stirring times. His children settled in the colony of the second Lord Baltimore, now Maryland.

The second son's name is lost, but we call him Anonymous Ford, had three sons and one daughter, was a farmer and settled in Maryland, owned land and slaves and other property.

James Ford, the third son, grew up on his father's farm and entered the Federal army, and was for over two years a soldier and continued till peace was established. My father was named for this uncle. After the war closed he sold his real estate and moved to Baltimore, Maryland, where he engaged in merchantising. His family consisted of five sons and one daughter. Many of his descendants, it is said, remain there yet.

Mary Ford, Ezekiel's only daughter, grew to womanhood and married a Mr. Harlen, a farmer, he owned no slaves, but she did. Two sons and three daughters sprang from this union. Their younger son's name was Dan. This member of the Harlan family settled in Richland county, Ohio, near my father, probably in the year 1816 or 17, they had three sons and one daughter, viz: James, Jay, Dan and Freelope: Freelope married Solomon Gladden about about 1817-18 and died shortly afterward without any living issue.

Many of the Harlans both north and west sprang from Mary Ford Harlen.

Dan Harlen's history is not traditional. I was well acquainted with him and his family, and much of the traditional history of the Ford stock was learned from him.

Henry Ford, the fourth son, born in 1748, was the youngest son of Ezekiel Ford; was raised on his father's farm and labored with the other members of the family. To labor with the hands at this period was not thought derogatory to a man's character or standing in society. He owned slaves and labored with them in clearing up his land and building log houses.

We have now passed through the traditional period, from the landing of Ben and Ezekiel Ford, at Jamestown, Va., to the year

1782—the time when true history begins. For further knowledge of Henry Ford and his wife Rachel Gillen Ford, turn back to pages 7 and 11 inclusive.

The dates of births, deaths and important events, are unknown.

### BEN FORD'S HISTORY.—TRADITIONAL.

#### THE NAME.

In a conversation with James Henry Ford D. D., now of Indianapolis, who is, evidently, a descendant out of the same stock of people that we are, wrote the following:

“A tradition in our family is that two brothers came over from Scotland, probably by the way of Ireland, as some of the same family lived in Ireland. The date of their coming is unknown. They, or one of them settled in the region of Jamestown (now Old Virginia), the other went farther north.

My grandfather was a grandson of the one near Jamestown, his name was Henry Taylor Ford; my father's name was John Henry Ford and he was born in Loudon County, Va. My name is James Henry Ford, and was born in Leesburgh, but raised by my Uncle, Edward Bruce, near the natural bridge, in Rockbridge county. One peculiarity of our family is that there is a Henry in every family.”

This peculiarity also obtains in the Maryland branch. My grandfather's name was Henry, and his youngest son's name was Henry. My father was named after his uncle James, but his oldest son's name was Henry, and my oldest son's name is James Henry. Father's sister, Hester Ford, had a James and a Henry in her family; Uncle Hugh Ford had a Henry; Uncle Robert Ford a Henry and a James. These names, James and Henry, occur, one or both, in almost every family of the descendants.

The elder brother that emigrated to Jamestown, as tradition gives it, was named Ben or probably Benjamin. This name runs

through our branch of the Ford family quite often. My great grandfather's name was said to be Ezekiel Ford; his eldest son's name was Nicholas Ford; my second brother's name was Nicholas—this name occurs in several families of our descendants; several of this name being in the state of Missouri.

This analogy could be extended much farther but this must suffice.

It is very evident to my mind, at least, that the Ford stock of Virginia and that of Maryland sprung from the same parent and are of the same blood, and they carry a very pronounced resemblance whenever found.

## APPENDIX NO 2.

## GROUP VII.

## HENRY FORD.

SON OF HENRY FORD SR.\*

Henry Ford Jr., was born in Maryland, and came with his family to Virginia. When he reached the proper age he learned the carpenter's trade with his brother John.

He was described by his mother as a fine looking young man, rather tall and slender, skin fair, some freckled, hair light or sandy, eyes blue and was of a very active temperament. He was regarded as a promising young man. He labored at his occupation up to his twenty-second year. He took a deep cold which settled on his lungs and finally developed tubercular consumption, from which he died. The last year of his life was spent with his brother James at Cadiz, Ohio. He and my oldest brother Henry, his name-sake, lie in the old burying ground at this place.

He had no family, was never married, and the date of his birth is known to be in 1780, he died in the year 1814.

This is the youngest and last member of Henry Ford's children.

---

\*This group was overlooked in setting up the type and should have been placed after his next older brother, Robert Ford, at page 212.

## APPENDIX B.

At page 141. my health and strength having failed, I was unable to write more. I, however, hoped to be able to give a brief history of my brothers and sisters, but failed to finish it in time for this book. As I have only a part of this work completed, I think best not to publish any of it, but will leave the manuscript with my family. I may finish it in the future, but have little hope of doing so.

AMERICA FORD.

## ERRATA.

On page 48, four lines from top, read 1843 instead of 1773.  
Also three lines below, read 1865 instead of 1875.

Page 77, fourteen lines from bottom, read R. T. Brown instead of R. S. Brown.

Page 80, seventeen lines below top, read ever instead of never.

Page 89, six lines below top, read Bechner instead of Brecker.

Page 112, twelve lines above bottom, read sixteen acres instead of ten.

Page 218, nine lines above bottom read Ringer instead of Ruger.

Page 221, eleven lines above bottom, read W. J. Ford instead of W. I. Ford.

Page 134, second line above bottom, read evolution instead of avocations.

Page 128, two lines from bottom, read are known instead of is known.

Page 136, eight lines from bottom, read rural instead of several.

Page 262, nine lines from bottom, read seventeen instead of 170.  
Also thirteen lines from bottom read line instead of time.

Page 172, three lines above bottom, erase the words, have one daughter and one son. Also two lines from bottom, read forty instead of twenty-four.

Page 173, fourteen lines from bottom, read Miss instead of Mrs. Henrietta.

Page 248, three lines from top, read importunity instead of opportunity.



# INDEX

OF

## HENRY FORD'S POSTERITY.

	Page.		Page.
HENRY FORD.....	7	Dyspepsia .....	17
Children.....	7	Description.....	13
Driven in fort—killed.....	8	Education.....	12-13
Described.....	10	Elizabeth Wycoff.....	22
Disability and cough.....	11	Environment.....	12
Died .....	10	Foreordination.....	14
Henry Ford described.....	8	Fractured ribs.....	16
Harlan killed—children.....	8-9	German .....	18
House burned.....	10	Labored on farm.....	12
Owned slaves.....	7	Legislature.....	16
Rachel Ford.....	8	Marriage .....	15
Rachel Gillan.....	10	Mechanical skill.....	16
Scalped.....	8	Mill.....	16
GROUP 1.		Moved—moved again.....	15-16
JAMES FORD SR., my father.....	12	One idea .....	120
A Presbyterian divine.....	12	Predestination .....	14
Anecdote.....	17	Patriots.....	22
A stumbling block.....	14	Politics.....	15
Built mill.....	16	Richland county, O.....	16
Bad habit.....	17	Size.....	12
Cleared land.....	15	Sold farm.....	13
Calvanism.....	14	Wedding dress.....	19
Children subject to death.....	15	REBECCA (FORD) SNEDEKER—	
Died in infancy.....	14	Mother of Group 1.	
Died.....	16	Domestic economy.....	18

	Page		Page.
Female attire.....	18	Ford county, Kansas .....	26.
Married .....	19	Family Record.....	29.
Patriots .....	22	Letter.....	28
Rebecca Snedeker.....	18	Moved to Iowa.....	29.
Snedeker family.....	18-22	ROBERT FORD,—	
Selling out.....	20	Nicholas' son.	
Wedding dress.....	19	Children.....	31
SUB GROUP 1.		Charles .....	31
Henry Ford, Son of James Ford.		George.....	31.
Died.....	23	Mary Emma.....	31
Henry Ford.....	23	Owens farm.....	29
SUB GROUP 2 OF GROUP 1.		War record.....	30.
NICHOLAS FORD.....	24	Wounded .....	31
A tanner.....	24	THOMAS PERRY FORD.—	
Bought farm.....	25	Nicholas' son.	
Died—wife and two sons.....	25	Industry.....	22
Married Susan Chow.....	24	Married.....	32
Married Mariah Jones .....	25	Marched with him.....	30.
Married Mariah Briggs.....	25	War record.....	32
Nicholas Ford's family.....	26-27	EMILY FORD,—	
Nicholas Ford.....	23	Nicholas' Daughter.	
Purchase farm.....	25	Andrew Slusser.....	33
Reunion.....	26	On: daughter.....	33
Rebel war.....	26	Youngest daughter.....	33
Snake bit.....	24	ARENDO FORD,—	
Sold farm.....	25	Nicholas' Son.	
Special providence.....	27	A moulder.....	33.
DORCAS FORD.		Enlisted in U. S. Army.....	33.
Nicholas' daughter.....	28	Married .....	33
Charles Ford.....	28	FRANK FORD,—	
Dorcas Ford .....	27	Nicholas' Son.	
Her children.....	27	Moral—temperate.....	34
Willard Ford.....	28	School teacher.....	34
EZEKIEL FORD,—		SUB GROUP 3 OF GROUP 1.	
Nicholas' Son.		Mary Ford, daughter of James	
Boys own farms.....	29	Ford, Sr.	
Ezekiel Ford.....	29	An impudent preacher.....	33.

## 287

	Page.		Page.
A soldier.....	42	An alderman.....	65-6
Born.....	142	Banker.....	65
Clarissa Hester.....	39	Beulah Kirk Ford.....	67
Children.....	41-42	Druggist.....	64
David Young.....	42	Enlisted.....	75 63
David Gladden Young.....	37-42	Earnest Ford—son.....	67
Died.....	47	Property owner.....	66
Daughter.....	47	War record.....	63
Elizabeth.....	43	Studies medicine.....	68
Eliza H.....	44	James Mitchel, Ford.....	63
Fine linnen.....	34	JAMES EDWIN FORD.....	60
Ford Garner.....	48	A farmer.....	60
Family.....	43	Learned a trade.....	49
Francis Marion.....	48	Married.....	49
James R. Young.....	40	Moved to Alton, Ill.....	52
Louisa.....	40	Moved to Wabash, Indiana.....	53
Last sickness.....	143	OSCAR CLEMENS FORD.....	57
Letters.....	44 5-6	A patriot.....	68
Mary Jane.....	34	Children.....	68
Married.....	143	Enlisted.....	68
Married David Young.....	36	War record.....	68
Obituary.....	144	Mary Ford obituary.....	58
Salina Nudd.....	43	Security.....	52
Salathiel Curtis.....	44	The last scene.....	57
Samantha Rachel.....	48	Use of tobacco.....	55
Sylvanus Day.....	47	WILLIAM WALLACE FORD.....	59
Twins.....	37	Farmer.....	60
Taught school.....	36	Children.....	60
Their children.....	37	Honorably discharged.....	59
Typhoid fever.....	111	War record.....	59
William Ford Young.....	39	WALTER WALLACE FORD.....	61
SUB GROUP 4 OF GROUP 1.		In cottage.....	61
William J. Ford, son of James Ford, Sr.		Taught school.....	61
Business matters.....	49-50 5-6	William J. Ford Jr.....	60
Children died—living.....	59	Education.....	60
Father sick.....	56	SUB GROUP 5 OF GROUP 1.	
Justic of the peace.....	54	James Ford, Son of James Ford Sr.	
JAMES MITCHEL FORD.....	57-58	A free man.....	82
		Attend lectures.....	82

	Page.		Page.
An episode.....	84	License.....	78
An invalid.....	100	Letter to Gen. Pope.....	105
A covenant with death.....	121	Letter to C. B. Walker.....	101
Battle at Pea Ridge.....	95	Laws of acoustics.....	115
Battle at Rich Mountain.....	95	Medical lectures.....	97
Bishop Chase.....	70	Moses, the law giver.....	125
Bed Rock of fact.....	122	Medical director.....	110
Born.....	69	New camp.....	109
Butler University.....	126	Not able to get home.....	106
Bought land.....	185	New covenant or will.....	124
Build house.....	88	One idea.....	120
Build church.....	114	On trial.....	80
Business matters.....	85-88-112	Over Ozark Mountains.....	106
Beauty of buildings spoiled.....	115	Purchase house.....	84
Commissioned surgeon.....	94	i't in irons.....	104
Calvinism.....	113-114-118-119	Politics.....	117
Discharge honorable.....	112	Puzzles to me.....	119
Demonstrating his theory.....	107	Reach home.....	107
Dr. Mason's proposition.....	77	Resign.....	112
Dr. J. L. Dicken no good.....	116	Religion.....	118
Drug store.....	88-114	Saw mill.....	88
Dr. J. H. Ford.....	116	Surgeon Ford sick.....	103-104
Doctrine taught 65 years ago.....	119	Sent home.....	106
Eye and ear surgery.....	114	Signal success.....	79
Faith.....	122	Stars fall.....	75
Ford James.....	69	Study medicine.....	74
Gen. Pope a gentleman.....	105	Science and religion.....	124
Georgetown sickness.....	101	Study higher branches.....	74
Go home.....	111	Sundy school teacher.....	123
Hallock's letter.....	104	Slavery.....	118
Hospital.....	97	Taking the risk.....	83
Iron Mountain.....	109	Taught school.....	75
Interest on stock.....	121	The divine name.....	120
Join church.....	121	The War.....	93
Jesus the Mediator.....	112	The law was faulty.....	121
Kenyon College.....	72	Three year service.....	100
Lager beer.....	111	The blood of Christ.....	123
Leave Connersville, Ind.....	87	Typhoid fever.....	91
Leave of absence.....	109	The attributes of God.....	125

# INDEX.

289

Page.	Page.
U. S. bank..... 86	JONKPH M. THOMPSON,
Usefulness cease..... 112	Mary's husband.
Unhealthy locality..... 107	A manufacturer..... 147
Very sick..... 107	Battles—tin..... 147
Women held in contempt..... 107	Harriet May..... 148
AMERICA (HOLTON) FORD,—	Her children..... 148
Wife of Dr. J. Ford.	Married..... 147
A. C. Holton..... 138	Mercantile business..... 146
Bade farewell..... 138	Postal service..... 147
Believed in God..... 141	Volunteered in U. S. army..... 147
Enter army..... 140	War with Mexico..... 146
Education..... 137	Went to California..... 146
Failing health..... 139	Went to Australia..... 146
Farm sold..... 139	Went to Colorado..... 146
Female education..... 137	MARTHA JANE,—
Her children..... 143	Daughter of James and America Ford.
In school..... 136	Died in infancy..... 149
Married life..... 138	ALLENA FORD (WILLIAMS),—
My grandfather..... 128	Daughter of J. and A. Ford.
Sickness..... 137	Education..... 149
United with church..... 140	Enters University..... 149
MARY ELIZABETH FORD,—	Education useful..... 150
Child of Dr. J. Ford.	Frank Ford and Jesse B. Williams. 150
America H. Thompson..... 143	Married..... 150
Ceased to be..... 144	Study higher branches..... 150
Children..... 143	Taught in high school..... 149
Christian church..... 143	Their children..... 150
Delegate..... 142	Wedding trip..... 150
Mary F. Thompson born..... 143	CAPT. B. F. WILLIAMS..... 151
Moses H. born..... 143	Comissioned captain..... 151
Not afraid to die..... 144	Enlisted..... 151
Obituary..... 144-5	Education..... 151
Rheumatism..... 142	In nine battles..... 152
Sunday school..... 142	Married..... 153
Sound body and mind..... 142	Study law—graduated..... 151
The end had come..... 144	NANCY ANNA FORD (STONE.)
Trait of character..... 143	A letter of her life..... 153
	A sweet voice..... 156

	Page.		Page.
Her children .....	154	Six children .....	164
Home in Gilman .....	155	Went to California .....	164
Married .....	154	EDWIN HOLTON FORD,—	
Mary Stella Stone .....	160	Son of Dr. J. Ford .....	165
Robert R. Stone .....	159	Agent for gas company .....	166
Taught school .....	154	A justice of the peace .....	165
Went to musical academy .....	154	A prominent farmer .....	165
CAPT. W. D. STONE .....	156	A Republican .....	165
Escort .....	158	Education .....	165
Enlisted in U. S. army .....	157	Knights of Pythias .....	166
Overland to Sherman's escort .....	158	Pluck .....	166
Railroad construction .....	159	HANNA FORD of Group 2,—	
Time expires .....	158	Child of Henry Ford.	
War record .....	157	Hanna Ford .....	166
JAMES HENRY FORD .....	160	Married Ruben Huff .....	166
Advent in business .....	161	No trace of them .....	166
Enlisted in the 14th battery .....	161	Owned slaves .....	166
Epileptic fit .....	160	Raised on farm .....	166
Hellen first child .....	163	HUGH FORD, SR., of Group 3,—	
House burned .....	162	Son of Henry Ford.	
Married .....	162	Hugh Ford Sr. ....	168
New house .....	163	A letter .....	167
Open an artery .....	160	A twin .....	167
Physician and surgeon .....	162	Anna Ford .....	168
Study medicine .....	161	A preacher .....	168
Surgeon in chief .....	163	A farmer .....	169
The lancet .....	160	Baptism .....	168
WILLIAM JESSE FORD,—		Born in Belmont Co., O. ....	170
Son of Dr. J. Ford.		Buy land .....	171
A republican .....	164	Children .....	168
Business matters .....	163	Clearing land .....	172
Education .....	163	Democrat .....	168
House painting .....	163	Elizabeth .....	172
Impaired vitality .....	163	Emigrated .....	170
Measles—sore eyes .....	163	Family record .....	172-3
Moved on his farm .....	165	History of children .....	173-4
Married—his wife .....	64	Henrietta Ford .....	173
New house .....	165	Hugh Ford Sr. ....	167

# INDEX.

291

Page.

Page.

Jernsha Ford-Mann.....	173	GROUP 4.	
Lost each other.....	169	HESTER FORD-YOUNG.....	181
Married.....	172	A musician.....	182
Mary Louisa Baker.....	173	Buckskin clothes.....	182
Of age.....	170	Children.....	183
Obituary.....	174	Cleared up farm.....	182
Pounding rock.....	171	Dancing.....	183
Seven sub groups.....	168-9	Daughters, 4—sons, 8.....	182-3
Sisters church members.....	170	Married Charles Young.....	181
VATCHEL M. FORD,—		Music.....	183
Son of Hugh Ford, Sr.....	170	Will power.....	181
Taught school.....	171	HENRY YOUNG, Sub group 1.....	184
Thomas B. Ford.....	174	Children.....	184
War of 1812.....	168	Married Nancy Buoget.....	184
HUGH FORD JR.,—		ISABELL YOUNG-TONEHILL,	
Ninth child of Hugh Sr.		Sub Group 11.....	184
A Democrat.....	175	David Young.....	36-37-38
Ann E. Davis.....	175	RACHEL YOUNG-GLADDEN, Sub	
An honest man.....	176	Group 3.	
A physician.....	176	Capt. Joseph Gladden.....	192
A letter.....	176	Children.....	192
ELIZABETH FORD (FRENCH).....	175-7	In memoriam.....	185-180
Frank D. French.....	178	In war of 12—and 1863 or 4.....	191
Have two children.....	175	Settled in Richland Co., O.....	191
Mina Conklin.....	176	Solomon Gladden.....	191
Married.....	175	SALLY YOUNG, Sub Group 5.....	193
William H. Ford.....	175	Her children.....	193
Wounded.....	178	Married Charles Baldwin.....	893
ELIZA FORD-BAKER, Sub group 10.....	178	GEORGE YOUNG, Sub Group 6.....	193
Her children.....	178	A farmer.....	193
Own farms.....	179	Children.....	193
Henry Baker.....	179	CHARLES YOUNG, Sub Group 7.....	194
THOMAS FORD, Sub group 11.....	179	A farmer.....	194
Went to Licking Co., O.....	179	Children.....	194
Married.....	179	HA. NAH YOUNG, Sub Group 8.....	194
Children.....	179	A housekeeper.....	194
Mary Ellen married.....	180	Children.....	194

	Page.		Page.
Married.....	194	Children.....	207
JAMES YOUNG, Sub Group 9.....	195	Moved to Oregon.....	207
A. Smith.....	195	Married.....	207
Married.....	195	Kiziah Ford's letter.....	209
Poisoned.....	195	Hon. G. Hollenback's letter.....	209-210-211
ALPHEUS YOUNG, Sub Group 10.....	195	RACHEL FORD-BURNS, Sub Group	
A sawyer.....	195	5.....	207
A letter.....	196	Children.....	207
Children.....	196	No history.....	207
Education.....	196-197-198	REBECCA FORD-DILLON, Sub	
Wife died.....	196	Group 6.....	208
HIRAM YOUNG, Sub Group 11.....	199	Children.....	208
A letter.....	199-200	No history.....	208
Children.....	200	MARIAH E. FORD, Sub Group 7.....	208
Married.....	200	No history.....	208
JOHN YOUNG, Sub Group 11.....	201	HENRY FORD, GROUP 7.	
Had a family.....	201	See Appendix No. 2.	
Married.....	201	TOBACCO.	
ROBERT FORD, Group 6.....	202	Cigarette smoking.....	225
Children.....	203	Dr. Maxon's experience.....	229
Married.....	211	Extra labor.....	224
Moved to Huron Co., O.....	202	Fourth witness.....	217
Moved to Fox River Co.....	202	Habits transmitted.....	226
My last vote.....	203	Kills children.....	216
Raised family.....	202	Medical properties.....	213
Raised in Virginia.....	202	New habit.....	221
HENRY FORD, Sub Group 1.....	205	Ruins boys.....	218
Children.....	204	Recapitulation.....	226
Married.....	204	Second witness.....	215
Settled in Kendal Co., Ill.....	204	Sickness.....	216
JANE FORD, Sub Group 2.....	204	Scatters disease.....	220
A letter.....	206	Stunts growth.....	215
A letter from Wm. L. Ford.....	208	The writer's experience.....	219
Her children.....	205	Third witness.....	216
Married Bethuel Clark.....	204	To get rid of it.....	223
JOHN FORD, Sub Group 3.....	207	INTEMPERANCE.	
Children.....	207	Desire hereditary.....	229
Married Margaret Douglas.....	207		
JAMES FORD, Sub Group 4.....	207		



# INDEX.

Page.	293
Drink evil.....227	Albumen.....265
Intemperance.....227	Conclusions.....270
Opium habit.....230	Fibrin.....266
Takes fire.....227	Salts in bread.....262
<b>SANITARY TOPOGRAPHY.</b>	<b>ACOUSTIC PROPERTIES OF HALLS</b> 271
Air currents.....235-236	Defective rooms.....272
Air currents in the earth.....258-259	Explanation of plates...272-274-275
Addenda.....261	Principles applied.....276
Air movements.....235-251-252	Velocity of sound.....271
Discovery.....233	<b>APPENDIX No. 1.</b> .....277
Explanation.....239	Unwritten history.....276
Explanation of plates.....239-240	Ben Ford.....278
<b>HYGATOPIA.</b> .....255	Ezekiel Ford.....278
Moving buildings...247-242-246-247	The name.....277
Other facts.....256	Traditional history.....278
Pathatopia.....254	The four masters.....277
Preliminary observations.....232	<b>APPENDIX No. 2.</b> .....282
Radiant heat.....244 255	<b>HENRY FORD, Group 7.</b> .....282
Sun's heat.....236-238-242	Died of consumption.....282
<b>ALKALIES IN BREAD</b> .....263-264	A carpenter.....282
Addenda.....279	<b>APPENDIX B.</b> .....283
	<b>ERRATA</b> .....284



# FORD GENEALOGY

*Being an Account of Some of the Fords  
Who were Early Settlers in  
New England*

---

*More particularly a record of  
the descendants of*

MARTIN-MATHEW FORD

*of*

BRADFORD, ESSEX CO., MASS.

*by*

ELIAKIM REED FORD

---

*Published by the Author, 1916, Oneonta, N. Y.*

### **Some of the Fords of Colonial Days**

In the early part of the 17th Century there were, in the Eastern States, several families of Fords, that, as far as is known, were not related; however, it is probable that they sprang from a common ancestor living in England, where the Fords, who came to America about that time, were originally located.

There was the Widow Ford who came over from England in the year 1621, in the ship "Fortune," which was the next vessel to arrive after the "Mayflower." The "Fortune" reached Cape Cod Nov. 9, and arrived at Plymouth Nov. 11, 1621. She brought 35 persons for the Colony, among them being a widow Ford with two or three children.

In a letter sent back by the "Fortune" which returned to England about a month after its arrival, the statement is made that "Goodwife Foord was delivered of a son the night she landed, and both are doing well." Widow Ford's children were William, John, and Martha,

William removed to Marshfield, and as early as 1650 was known as "William Ford of Marshfield." He had many descendants, among them being the late Dr. Corydon L. Ford of Ann Arbor, Mich., who spent much time in genealogical research; and upon his death in the spring of 1895, left his papers to the "Historical Genealogical Society" of Boston.

The daughter, Martha, married one of the governors of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Another was Timothy Ford who lived in Charlestown, Mass., in 1637. In 1639 he removed to New Haven, Conn., where he died Aug. 28, 1684. His wife, Eliza, died July 25, 1681. They had a numerous family, among them being a son and grandson named Matthew, but they were not related to the family of Matthew Ford mentioned later in this volume, or to the Marshfield Fords. (Further mention of this branch of the family can be found in Savage's "Genealogical Dictionary," Vol. II; also Births, Marriages

## GENERATION I.

Mathew Ford, of Bradford, was born about 1661; m. March 25, 1684, Lydia, dau. of John and Lydia (Shatswell) Griffen, who was b. June 21, 1664.

### Children:

- +2 Lydia (2); b. Apr. 12, 1686; m. Eleazer Lake.
- 3 Theophilus (2); b. Oct. 8, 1687; d. Jan. 25, 1688/9.
- +4 John (2); b. May 11, 1689; m.
  - 1. Abigail Polley
  - 2. Judith Richards
  - 3. Ann Herrick
- +5 Matthew (2); b. Apr. 12, 1691; m. Mary Foster.
- 6 Mary (2); b. Jan. 24, 1691/2.

### 2 LYDIA FORD (2). Lake Branch.

Descent: Mathew (1), Lydia (2).

Lydia (2); dau. of Mathew (1) and Lydia (Griffen) Ford; b. Apr. 12, 1686; d. May 29, 1743; m. Dec. 7, 1708, Eleazer Lake, who was b. July 9, 1686; d. Apr. 29, 1771.

### Children:

- 7 Lydia (3); b. Nov. 4, 1709.
- 8 Priscilla (3); b. Oct. 11, 1715.
- 9 Abigail (3); b. Aug. 14, 1719.
- 10 Eleazer (3); b. Sept. 12, 1724.
- 11 Daniel (3); b. June 22, 1726.

After Lydia's death, Eleazer Lake m. Jan. 12, 1743/4, Mary Bixby, who d. between Apr. 14 and Sept. 7, 1775.

## 4 GENERATION II

Descent: Mathew (1), John (2).

John (2) s. of Mathew (1) and Lydia (Griffen) Ford.

b. May 11, 1689.

m. 1st. Jan. 1, 1710/11, Abigail Polley, who d. Mar. 4,

**Fords in New Jersey Since 1700.**

E. R. Ford of Oneonta, N. Y., who has just written a book giving an account of the Fords who were early settlers in New England, says that there were Fords in New Jersey as early as 1700, if not before, having come to Morristown and Woodbridge from Marshfield, Mass.—[Roseville, N. J., Citizen.

**Matter of Historical Interest.**

E. R. Ford of Oneonta, N. Y., is the author of "Fords Who Were Early Settlers in New England," a volume which, while a genealogy, also contains much matter of historical interest interwound in the account of the family of Martin-Mathew Ford of Bradford, Mass., and his descendants.—[New York Times.



The foregoing are sample pages from a book about to be published, which will be sold on subscription at \$5.00 per copy. The edition is limited to one hundred copies.

It is embellished with numerous illustrations of persons and places, making a book of about two hundred pages.

The following press notices regarding the book have recently appeared:

**THE FORD GENEALOGY.**  
**Carefully Compiled Record of**  
**Well Known Family Soon**  
**to Appear.**

Eliakim Reed Ford of this city, a descendant in the seventh generation from Martin-Mathew Ford, who was born in 1661, has just completed the compilation of a "Ford Genealogy," a work which embraces the history of the direct line of this branch of the Ford family in America, with many collateral branches, to the present time—in all a period of ten generations.

In addition to the genealogical tables, which are very complete in every generation, the book includes a concise history of some of the Ford settlers in New England, along with biographical sketches of well known members of the family in each early generation, among them being Col. Jacob Ford, who served with distinction in the American Revolution, and of his grandson, Eliakim Reed Ford sr., who settled in Oneonta in 1822, and from whom the larger number of those in Oneonta and vicinity bearing the Ford name are descended. There will also be about 20 illustrations, embracing persons and places connected with the family history. The book will contain about 200 pages.

The genealogy, which will be privately printed and will be in a

very limited edition, will be issued from the office of The Oneonta Herald, and will have the benefit of the personal supervision of the author, thus assuring the highest degree of accuracy. It is believed that practically the whole edition will be exhausted by advance orders from leading libraries and from members of the family.—[Oneonta Daily Star.

**"Ford Genealogy."**

A volume entitled "Ford Genealogy" is soon to be published. It is an account of some of the Fords who were early settlers in New England; more particularly a record of Martin-Mathew Ford of Bradford, Essex county, Massachusetts (1661). The author is Eliakim Reed Ford of Oneonta, N. Y. The book mentions the names of upwards of 1,300 descendants of Martin-Mathew Ford, with articles concerning many members of the family. One particular, interesting is about Colonel Jacob Ford, who served with distinction in the American Revolution, taking part in the Battle of Saratoga.

Mr. Ford has spent much time in New York, Connecticut and Massachusetts, searching records and visiting libraries. The work shows much painstaking labor and research. The New York State Library and Minnesota State Library are subscribers for the work.—[Albany Evening Journal.

#### Compiled by Oneonta Resident.

Eliakim Reed Ford of this city is the author of a volume entitled "Ford Genealogy," which is soon to be published.

After spending several years in the most painstaking research, visiting old churches and graveyards, consulting early town records and collecting a mass of hitherto unpublished information regarding his ancestors, Mr. Ford has compiled his "Record of the Descendants of Martin Mathew Ford," who lived in Bradford, Essex County, Mass., in 1681. This record, besides mentioning several contemporary branches of the Ford family, gives detailed accounts of over 1,300 direct descendants of "Matthew of Bradford."—[Binghamton Press.

#### A Valuable Genealogy.

Early in 1916 a volume entitled "Ford Genealogy" will be published by its author, Eliakim Reed Ford, of Oneonta, N. Y. The work is the result of much labor and research extending over a period of several years, and contains valuable information collected from church records, tombstones, and early county documents.

Besides mentioning several contemporary branches, the volume gives the records of over 1,300 descendants of Martin-Mathew Ford, who lived in Bradford, Essex County, Massachusetts, in 1681, and from whom the writer traces his descent through seven generations.

The genealogical record is supplemented by many fine illustrations and historical sketches of prominent Fords, among them being a most interesting account of the Revolutionary services of Col. Jacob Ford, who was for a time commander at Cherry Valley, and who served with distinction in the battle of Saratoga.

The book contains much in-

formation not elsewhere obtainable and will no doubt prove of deep interest, not only to members of the family mentioned therein, but to all libraries which specialize in works of this kind. The edition is to be limited to 100 copies.—[Utica Saturday Globe.

#### Recalls the Quantrell Raid.

A bouquet of flowers saved the home of George Ford of Lawrence, Kan., from the torch when Quantrell led his band of raiders through Kansas in the early '60's. E. R. Ford of Oneonta, N. Y., tells the story in his book describing some of the Fords who first settled in New England and their descendants. Quantrell had already burned the town of Lawrence and was setting fire to all the barns and houses on his way. As he approached the home of Ford, a place famous for its flower beds and vine-clad buildings, he was met at the gate leading through the flower garden to the house by Mrs. Ford, who presented him with a beautiful bouquet from her choicest plants. Returning to his band of bloody companions, he said, as he mounted his horse, "Leave that place alone! It is too pretty to destroy." It was the only house on the way to escape the flames.—[Kansas City Star.

#### The Fords in New England.

E. R. Ford of Oneonta, N. Y., who for years has been making a study of the New England Fords in general, and of Martin-Mathew Ford of Bradford, in particular, has published the data collected in book form. The wills and other public documents reproduced make the volume of interest to members of the Ford family in Massachusetts, and to students of colonial New England.—[Springfield Republican.



## FAMILY RECORD.

### BIRTHS

Elia May Dailey.  
Born Feb. 4" 1865  
at Rushville, Ind.

Carey Elmon Morgan.  
Born Aug. 21" 1860.  
at Johnson Co., Ind.

Ralph Irving Morgan.  
Born Dec. 25" 1884  
at Brownsburg Ind.

Walter Dailey Morgan.  
Born July 27" 1886.  
at Acadia, Ind.

## FAMILY RECORD.

### BIRTHS

Ruth Morgan  
Born May 29" 1892  
at Vicksburg, Indiana

## FAMILY RECORD.

### MARRIAGES

Carey Elmore Morgan  
and  
Ellen May Dailey.  
at  
Livingston, Indiana  
Oct. 17<sup>th</sup> 1883.

